THE HUTH LIBRARY.

THE COMPLETE WORKS OF THOMAS NASHE.

VOL. II.

PIERCE PENILESSE HIS SVPPLICATION TO THE DIUELL.

HARVEY-GREENE TRACTATES:

i. A Wonderfull Strange and Miraculous Astrologicall Prognostication.

ii. Strange Newes of the Intercepting certaine Letters.

1592.

When Saul receiv'd no anfwer down from heav'n,
How quickly was his jealous paffion driven
A defp'rate courfe! He needs muft cure the itch
Of his extreme defiers, by a Witch:
When we have loft our way to God, how levell,
How eafie to be found 's the way to the Devell.

Francis Quarles (Chertsey Worthies' Library Edition,
'Divine Fancies,' p. 216).

The Huth Library

OR

ELIZABETHAN-JACOBEAN

[illegible]

BOOKS

IN

VERSE AND PROSE

LARGELY

From the Library of



Henry Huth, Esq.

[illegible]

[illegible]

BY THE

[illegible]

FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION ONLY

The Huth Library.

THE

COMPLETE WORKS

OF

THOMAS NASHE.

IN FOUR VOLUMES.

FOR THE FIRST TIME COLLECTED AND EDITED
WITH MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION, NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS, ETC.,

BY THE REV.
ALEXANDER B. GROSART, LL.D. (EDIN.), F.S.A. (SCOT.),
St. George's, Blackburn, Lancashire.

VOL. II.

PIERCE PENILESSE HIS SVPPLICATION TO THE DIUELL.

HARVEY-GREENE TRACTATES:

i. A WONDERFULL STRANGE AND MIRACULOUS ASTROLOGICALL PROGNOSTICATION.

ii. STRANGE NEWES OF THE INTERCEPTING CERTAINE LETTERS.

1592.

PRINTED FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION ONLY.
1883—84.

50 Copies.]

Printed by Hazell, Watson, and Viney, London and Aylesbury.

CONTENTS.

LATE tyr'd with wo, euen ready for to pine
With rage of loue, I cald my Loue vnkind;
She in whofe eyes loue, though vnfelt, doth fhine,
Sweet faid, that I true loue in her fhould find.
I ioyed; but ftraight thus watred was my wine:
That loue fhe did, but loued a loue not blind;
Which would not let me, whom fhee loued, decline
From nobler courfe, fit for my birth and mind.
And therfore, by her loue's authority,
Wild me thefe tempefts of vaine loue to flie,
And anchor faft my felfe on Vertue's fhore.
Alas, if this the only mettall be
Of loue new-coind to help my beggery,
Deere, loue me not, that you may loue me more.

SIR PHILIP SIDNEY: 'Aftrophell and Stella,' xii.

V.

PIERCE PENILESSE HIS SUPPLICATION TO THE DIUELL.

1592.

NOTE.

For the exemplar of 'Pierce Penileſſe' of 1592 as sanctioned by its Author, I am again indebted to the Huth Library. The semi-surreptitious one issued earlier in the same year by a different publisher—Richard Jhônes, against whom good Nicholas Breton made complaint for his sharp practice in assigning to popular names productions that were not really theirs—was reprinted by Mr. J. Payne Collier, most perfunctorily and carelessly, for the 'Shakespeare Society' (1 vol., 1843). The title-page—showing the 'long taile' which Nash demands shall be suppressed—is given on our *verso* of that of 1592 prepared by him in substitution, together with Jhones's short Epistle. As an Appendix-Note to 'Pierce Penileſſe,' I add at the close of our reproduction, such 'faults' of the Jhones edition as seem to call for record, albeit I suspect some at least belong to Mr. Collier himself, rather than to his (unique) exemplar. Be this as it may, our text corrects many irritating misprints, and gives better readings in several important places. It is a small 4to, 16 leaves, unpaged, and folios (*i.e.* on one side, from 17 to 40, 2—L iii.). See our 'Memorial-Introduction—Critical,' in Vol. IV., for notices of this singular book, including a contemporary French translation; also 'Memorial-Introduction—Biographical,' in Vol. I.—A. B. G.

Pierce Penilesse
HIS SVPPLICATION
to the Diuell.

Barbaria grandis habere nihil.

Written by *Tho. Nash*, Gent.

LONDON,
Printed by Abell Ieffes, for
Iohn Busbie, 1592.

PIERCE PENILESSE
HIS SUPPLICATION TO THE DEUILL.

Defcribing the ouer-fpreading of Vice, and the fuppreffion of Vertue.

Pleafantly interlac'd with variable delights: and pathetically intermixt with conceipted reproofes.

Written by THOMAS NASH, Gentleman.

LONDON,
Imprinted by RICHARD IHONES, dwelling at the Signe of the *Rofe and Crowne*, nere *Holburne Bridge*.
1592.

The Printer to the Gentlemen Readers.

Gentlemen,

In the Authour's abfence, I haue been bold to publifh this pleafaunt and wittie difcourfe of *Pierce Penileffe, his Supplication to the Diuell*: which title, though it may feeme ftrange and in it felfe fomewhat prepofterous, yet if you vouchfafe the reading, you fhall finde reafon, as well for the Authour's vncouth nomination, as for his vnwonted beginning without epiftle, proeme, or dedication: al which he hath inferted conceitedly in the matter; but Ile be no blab to tell you in what place. Beftow the looking, and I doubt not but you fhall finde dedication, epiftle, and proeme to your liking.

Yours bounden in affection,
R. I.

A priuate Epiſtle of the Author to the Printer.

Wherein his full meaning and purpoſe (in publiſhing this Booke) is ſet foorth.

FAith I am verie ſorrie (Sir) I am thus vnawares betrayed to infamie. You write to me my booke is haſting to the ſecond impreſſion: he that hath once broke the Ice of impudence, neede not care how deepe he wade in diſcredite. I confeſſe it to be a meere toy, not deſeruing any iudicial mans view: If it haue found any friends, ſo it is, you know very well that it was abroad a fortnight ere I knewe of it, and vncorrected and vnfiniſhed it hath offred it ſelfe to the oppen ſcorne of the world. Had you not beene ſo froward in the republiſhing of it, you ſhould haue had certayne Epiſtles to Orators and Poets, to inſert to the later end; As namely, to the Ghoſt of *Macheuill*, of *Tully*, of *Ouid*, of *Roſcius*, of *Pace* the Duke of Norfolks Ieſter: and laſtly, to the Ghoſt of *Robert Greene*,

telling him, what a coyle there is with pamphleting on him after his death. Thefe were prepared for *Pierce Penileffe* firft fetting foorth, had not the feare of infection detained mee with my Lord in the Countrey.

Now this is that I would haue you to do in this fecond edi / tion; Firft, cut off that long-tayld Title,* and let mee not in the forefront of my Booke, make a tedious Moũtebanks Oration to the Reader, when in the whole there is nothing praife-worthie.

I heare fay there be obfcure imitators, that goe about to frame a fecond part to it, and offer it to fell in Paules Church-yard, and elfewhere, as from me. Let me requeft you, (as euer you will expect any fauour at my hands) to get fome body to write an Epiftle before it, ere you fet it to fale againe, importing thus much; that if any fuch lewd deuife intrude it felfe to their handes, it is a cofenage and plaine knauery of him that fels it to get mony, and that I haue no manner of intereft or acquaintance with it. Indeed if my leyfure were fuch as I could wyfh, I might 'haps (halfe a yeare hence) write the retourne of the *Knight of the Poft* from Hell, with the *Deuils* anfwer to the *Supplication*: but as for a fecond

* See it on *verso* of Nash's own title-page, p. 4.—G.

part of *Pierce Penileſſe*, it is a moſt ridiculous rogery.*

Other newes I am aduertized of, that a ſcald triuiall lying Pamphlet, called *Greens groatſ-worth of wit* is giuen out to be of my doing. God neuer haue care of my ſoule, but vtterly renounce me, if the leaſt word or ſyllable in it proceeded from my penne, or if I were any way priuie to the writing or printing of it. I am growne at length to ſee into the vanitie of the worlde more than euer I did, and now I condemne my ſelfe for nothing ſo much, as playing the dolt in Print. Out vpon it, it is odious, eſpecially, in this moralizing age, wherein euery one ſeekes to ſhew himſelfe a Polititian by mis-interpreting.

In one place of my Booke, *Pierce Penileſſe* ſaith but to the Knight of the Poſt, *I pray how might I call you*, and they ſay, I meant one *Howe*, a Knaue of that trade, that I neuer heard of before.

The Antiquaries are offended without cauſe, thinking I goe about to detract from that excellent profeſſion, when (God is my witneſſe) I reuerence it as much as any / of them all, and had no manner of alluſion to them that ſtumble at it. I hope they wil giue me leaue to think there be fooles of that Art as well as of all other; but to ſaye, I vtterly

* See on this in our Memorial-Introduction prefixed to Vol. I.; also *ibid.*, Critical, in Vol. IV.—G.

condemne it as an vnfruitfull ſtudie, or ſeeme to deſpiſe the excellent quallified partes of it, is a moſt falſe and iniurious ſurmiſe. There is nothing that if a man liſt he may not wreſt or peruert, I cannot forbid anie to thinke villainouſly, *Sed caueat emptor*, Let the interpreter beware: for none euer heard mee make Allegories of an idle text. Write who wil againſt me, but let him look his life be without ſcandale: for if he touch me neuer ſo litle, Ile be as good as the Blacke Booke to him and his kindred.

Beggerly lyes no beggerly wit but can inuent: who ſpurneth not at a dead dogge: but I am of another metall, they ſhall knowe that I liue as their euill Angell, to haunt them world without end, if they diſquiet me without cauſe. Farewell, and let me heare from you as ſoone as it is come foorth. I am the Plagues priſoner in the Country as yet: if the ſickneſſe ceaſe before the thirde impreſſion, I will come and alter whatſoeuer may be offenſiue to any man, and bring you the latter ende.

Your friend, *Tho. Naſh.* /

Pierce Penilesse his Supplication to the Diuell.

HAUING spent manie yeeres in studying how to liue, and liude a long time without mony: hauing tired my youth with follie, and surfetted my minde with vanitie, I began at length to looke backe to repentaunce, & addresse my endeuors to prosperitie: But all in vaine, I sate vp late, and rose earely, contended with the colde, and conuersed with scarcitie: for all my labours turned to losse, my vulgar Muse was despised and neglected, my paines not regarded, or slightly rewarded, and I my selfe (in prime of my best wit) laid open to pouertie. Whereupon (in a malecontent humor) I accused my fortune, raild on my patrones, bit my pen, rent my papers, & ragde in all points like a mad man.

Discite qui sapitis, cum hæc quæ scimus inertes; Sed trepidas acies, et fera bella sequi.

In which agony tormenting my selfe a long time, I grew by degrees to a milder discontent: and pausing a while ouer my standish, I resolued in verse to paynt forth my passion: which, best

agreeing with the vaine of my vnreſt, I began to complaine in this ſort.

Est aliquid fatale malum per verba levare.

Why iſt damnation to diſpaire and dye,
When life is my true happineſſe diſeaſe?
My ſoule, my ſoule, thy ſafetie makes me flie
The faultie meanes, that might my paine appeaſe.
Diuines and dying men may talke of hell,
But in my heart, her ſeuerall torments dwell:

[*Ingenio perii qui miser ipse meo.*]

Ah worthleſſe Wit, to traine me to this woe,
Deceitfull Artes, that nouriſh Diſcontent:
Ill thriue the Follie that bewitcht me ſo:
Vaine thoughts adieu, for now I will repent.

Paupertas impulit audax ut versus facerem.

And / yet my wantes perſwade me to proceede,
Since none takes pitie of a Scholler's neede.

Forgiue me, God, although I curſe my birth,
And ban the aire, wherein I breathe a Wretch:
Since Miſerie hath daunted all my mirth,
And I am quite vndone through promiſe-breach.

Pol me occidistis, amici.

Oh frends, no frends, that then vngently frowne,
When changing Fortune caſts vs head-long downe.

Without redreſſe complaynes my careleſſe verſe,
And *Mydas*-eares relent not at my moane:
In ſome farre Land will I my griefes reherſe,
Mongſt them that will be mou'd when I ſhall groane.

Hei mihi, quam paucos hæc mea dicta mouent.

England (adieu) the Soyle that brought me foorth,
Adieu vnkinde, where ſkill is nothing woorth.

Theſe Rymes thus abruptly ſet downe, I toſt my imagination a thouſand waies, to ſee if I could finde any meanes to relieue my eſtate: But all my thoughts conſorted to this concluſion, that the world was vncharitable, & I ordained to be * miſerable. Thereby I grew to conſider how many baſe men that wanted thoſe partes which I had, enioyed content at will, & had wealth at commaund: I calde to minde a Cobler, that was worth fiue hundred pound, an Hoſtler that had built a goodly Inne, & might diſpende forty pounds yerely by his Land, a Carre-man in a lether pilche, that had whipt out a thouſand pound out of his horſe taile: and haue I more witte than all theſe (thought I to my ſelfe)? am I better borne? am I better brought vp? yea, and better fauored? and yet am I a begger? What is the cauſe? how am I croſt, or whence is this curſe?

* *Miser est quicunque ærumnam suam nequit occultare.*

Fortuna fauet fatuos.

Meritis expendite causam.

Euen from hence, that men that ſhould employ ſuch as I am, are enamoured of their own wits, and think whateuer they do is excellent, though it be neuer ſo ſcuruie: that Learning (of the ignorant) is rated after the value of the inke and paper: and a Scriuener better paid for an obligation, than a Scholler for the beſt Poeme he can make; that * euerie groſſe brainde Idiot is ſuffered to come into print, who if hee ſet foorth a Pamphlet of the praiſe of Pudding-pricks, or write a Treatiſe of *Tom Thumme*, or ẏ exployts of *Vntruſſe*; it is bought vp thicke & three-folde, when better things lie dead. How then can we chuſe but be needy, when ther are ſo many droans amongſt vs? or euer proue rich, ẏ toyle a whole yeare for fair looks?

[* *Scribimus indocti doctique poemata passim.*]

Gentle / *Sir Philip Sidney*, thou knewſt what belongd to a Scholler, thou kneweſt what paines, what toile, what trauell, conduct to perfection: wel couldſt thou giue euery Vertue his encouragement, euery Art his due, euery writer his deſert: cauſe none more vertuous, witty, or learned than thy ſelfe.

Cultor et Antistes doctorum sancte virorum.

But thou art dead in thy graue, and haſt left too few ſucceſſors of thy glory, too few to cheriſh the Sonn of the Muſes, or water thoſe budding hopes with their plentie, which thy bountie erſt planted.

Heu rapiunt mala fata bonos.

Beleeue me, Gentlemen, for ſome croſſe mis-happes, haue taught me experience, there is not that ſtrickt obſeruation of honour, which hath bene here-tofore. Men of great calling take it of merite, to haue their names eternizde by Poets; and whatſoeuer pamphlet or dedication encounters them, they put it vp their ſleeues, and ſcarce giue him thankes that preſents it. Much better is it for thoſe golden Pens to raiſe ſuch vngratefull Peaſants from the Dung-hill of obſcuritie, and make them equal in fame to the Worthies of olde, when their doting ſelfe-loue ſhall challenge it of dutie, and not onely giue them nothing themſelues, but impoueriſh liberalitie in others.

Fluctibus in mediis navim Palinure relinquis.

This is the lamentable condition of our Times, that men of Arte muſt ſeeke almes of Cormorants, & thoſe that deſerue beſt, be kept vnder by Dunces, who count it a policie to keep them bare, becauſe they ſhould follow their bookes the better: think-ing belike, that, as preferment hath made them-ſelues idle, that were earſt painfull in meaner places, ſo it wold likewiſe ſlacken the endeuours of thoſe Students, that as yet ſtriue to excell in hope of aduauncement. A good policie to ſuppreſſe ſuper-fluous liberalitie. But, had it beene practiſed when they were promoted, the Yeomandry of the Realme had been better to paſſe than it is, and one Droane

ſhould not haue driuen ſo manie Bees from their hony-combes.

I, I, weele giue looſers leaue to talke: it is no matter what *Sic probo* and his pennileſſe companions prate, whileſt we haue the gold in our coffers: this is it that will make a knaue an honeſt man, & my neighbour *Cramptons* ſtripling a better Gentleman than his Grand ſier. O it is a trim thing when Pride, the ſonne, goes before, & Shame, the father, followes after. Such preſidents there are in our Cōmon-wealth a great many; not ſo much of them whome learning & Induſtrie hath exalted, (whome I prefer before *Genus et proauos*) as of Carterly vpſtarts, that out-face Towne & Countrey in their veluets, / when Sir *Rowland Ruſſet-coat*, their dad, goes ſagging euery day in his round gaſcoynes of white cotton, & hath much a do (poore pennie-father) to keepe his vnthrift elbowes in reparations.

Marry, happy are they, ſay I, that haue ſuch fathers to worke for them, whilſt they plaie: for where other men turne ouer manie leaues to get bread and cheeſe in their olde age, and ſtudie twentie yeares to diſtill golde out of incke, our yoong maiſters doo nothing but deuiſe how to ſpend and aſke counſaile of the wine and capons, how they may quicklieſt conſume their patrimonies. As for me, I liue ſecure from all ſuch perturba-

tions: for (thankes bee to God) I am *vacuus viator*, and care not, though I meete the Commiſſioners of *New-market-heath* at high midnight, for any croſſes, Images, or pictures that I carry about mee, more than needes.

Than needes, quoth I, nay, I would be aſhamde of it, if *Opus* & *Vſus* were not knocking at my doore twentie times a weeke when I am not within: the more is the pitie, that ſuch a franke Gentleman as I, ſhould want: but, ſince the dice doo runne ſo vntowardly on my ſide, I am partly prouided of a remedy. For wheras, thoſe that ſtand moſt on their honour, haue ſhut vp their purſes, & ſhift vs off with court-hollie-bread: & on the other ſide, a number of hypocriticall hot-ſpurres, that haue God alwaies in their mouthes, will giue nothing for Gods ſake: I haue clapt vp a handſome Supplication to the Diuell, and ſent it by a good fellow, that I know will deliuer it.

And becauſe you may beleeue mee the better, I care not if I acquaint you with the circumſtance.

I was informd of late daies, that a certaine blinde Retayler called the Diuel, vſed to lend money vpon pawnes or any thing, and would let one for a neede, haue a thouſand poundes vppon a Statute Merchaunt of his ſoule: or if a man plide him throughly, would truſt him vppon a Bill of his hand, without any more circumſtaunce. Beſides,

hee was noted for a priuie Benefactor to Traytors and Parasites, and to aduaunce fooles and asses farre sooner than any: to be a greedie pursuer of newes, and so famous a Politician in purchasing, that Hel, which at the beginning was but an obscure Village, is now become a huge citie, whervnto all countryes are Tributary.

These manifest coniectures of Plentie, assembled in one common-place of ability, I determined to clawe Auarice by the elboe, til his full belly gaue me a full hand, and let him blood with my pen (if it / might be) in the veine of liberality: and so (in short time) was this Paper-monster, *Pierce Penilesse*, begotten.

But written and all, heere lies the question, where shall I find this old Asse, that I may deliuer it? Masse, thats true: they say the Lawyers haue the deuill and al: and it is like enough he is playing Ambodexter amongst them. Fie, fie, the deuill a driuer in Westminster Hall: it can neuer be.

Now, I pray, what do you imagine him to be? Perhaps you thinke it is not possible he should be so graue. Oh then, you are in an errour, for he is as formal as the best Scriuener of them all. Marry, he doth not vse to weare a night-cap, for his hornes will not let him: and yet I knowe a hundred, as well headed as he, that will make a iolly shift with

a Court-cup on their crownes, if the weather be colde.

To proceed with my tale: to Weſtminſter Hall I went, and made a ſearch of Enquiry, from the blacke gowne to the buckram bagge, if there were any ſuch Sergeant, Bencher, Counſailer, Atorney, or petifogger, as *Signior Cornuto Diabolo*, with the good face? But they al (*vnâ voce*) affirmed, that he was not there: marry, whether hee were at the Exchange or no, amongſt the ritch Merchants, that they could not tell: but it was likelier of the two, that I ſhould meet with him, or heare of him, at the leaſt, in thoſe quarters. I faith, and ſay you ſo, quoth I? and Ile beſtow a little labour more, but Ile hunt him out.

Without more circumſtance, thither came I: and, thruſting my ſelfe, as the manner is, amongſt the confuſion of languages, I aſked (as before) whether he were there extant or no? But from one to another, *Non novi Dæmonem*, was all the anſwer I could get. At length (as Fortune ſerued) I lighted vpon an old, ſtraddling Uſurer, clad in a damaſke caſſocke, edged with Fox-fur, a paire of trunke ſlops, ſagging down like a ſhoo-maker's wallet, and a ſhort thrid-bare gown on his backe, fac't with moath-eaten budge: vpon his head he wore a filthy, coarſe biggin, & next it a garniſh of night-caps, with a ſage butten cap, of

the forme of a cow-ſheard, ouerſpread very orderly: a fat chuffe it was, I remember, with a gray beard cut ſhort to the ſtumps, as though it were grimde, and a huge, woorme-eaten noſe, like a cluſter of grapes hanging downe-wards. Of him I demaunded, if hee could tell mee any tidings of the partie I ſought for.

By my troth, quoth he, ſtripling, (and then he cought) I ſawe him not lately, nor know I certainely where he keepes: but thus much I heard / by a Broker, a friend of mine, that hath had ſome dealings with him in his time, that he is at home ſicke of the goute, and will not bee ſpoken withal vnder more than thou art able to giue, ſom two or three [hundred] angels, if thou haſt any ſute to him: & then, perhaps, hele ſtraine curteſie, with his legges in childe-bed, and come forth and talke with thee: but, otherwiſe, *non eſt domi*, hee is buſie with *Mammon*, & t[h]e Prince of the North, how to build vp his kingdome, or ſending his ſpirits abroad to vndermine the maligners of his gouernment.

I, hearing of this colde comfort, tooke my leaue of him very faintly, and like a careles male-content, that knew not which way to turne, retired me to Paules, to ſeeke my dinner with Duke *Humfrey*; but, when I came there, the olde ſouldioer was not vp. Hee is long a riſing, thought I; but thats all

one, for hee that hath no money in his purſe, muſt go dine with Sir John Beſt-betruſt, at the ſigne of the chalk and the Poſt.

Two hongry turnes had I ſcarce fetcht in this waſt gallery, when I was encountred by a neat pedanticall fellow, in forme of a cittizen: who thruſting himſelfe abruptly into my company, like an Intelligencer, began very earneſtly to queſtion me about the cauſe of my diſcontent, or what made me ſo ſad, that ſeemed too young to be acquainted with ſorrow. I nothing nice to vnfold my eſtate to any what ſoeuer, diſcourſt to him the whole circumſtaunce of my care, and what toyll and paines I had tooke in ſearching for him that would not be heard of. Why ſir (quoth he), had I bene priuie to your purpoſe before, I could haue eaſd you of this trauell; for if it be the deuill you ſeeke for, know I am his man. I pray, ſir, how might I call you? A knight of the Poſt, quoth he, for ſo I am tearmed: a fellowe that will ſweare you any thing for twelue pence: but indeed, I am a ſpirite in nature and eſſence, that take vpon me this humaine ſhape, onely to ſet men together by the eares, and ſend ſoules by millions to hell.

Non bene conducti vendunt perjuria testes.

Now truſt me, a ſubſtantiall trade: but when doe you thinke you could ſend next to your maiſter? why, euery day: for there is not a

cormorant that dies, or Cut-purſe that is hanged, but I diſpatch letters by his ſoule to him, and to al my friends in the Low-cuntries: wherefore, if you haue any thing that you would haue tranſported, giue it me, and I will ſee it deliuered.

Yes, marry haue I (quoth I) a certaine Supplication heere vnto your Maiſter, which you may peruſe if it pleaſe you. With that he opened it, and read as followeth.

To the high and mightie Prince of Darkneſſe, Donſell dell Lucifer, King of Acheron, Stix, and Phlegeton, duke of Tartary, marqueſſe of Cocytus, and Lord high Regent of *Lymbo*: his diſtreſſed

Orator, Pierce Pennileſſe, *wiſheth encreaſe of damna-*tyon and malediction eternall, per Ieſum Chriſtum *Dominum Noſtrum.*

MOſt humbly ſueth vnto your ſinfulnes, your ſingle ſoald Orator, *Pierce Pennileſſe*: that whereas your impious excellence hath had the poore tennement of his purſe any time this halfe yeer for your dauncing ſchoole, and he (nothwithſtanding) hath receiued no penny nor croſſe for farme, according to the vſuall manner, it may pleaſe your graceleſſe Maieſtie to conſider of him,

No: Ile be sworne vpon a book haue I not.

and giue order to your ſeruant Auarice he may be diſpatched: inſomuch as no man heere in London can haue a dauncing ſchoole without rent, and his wit and knauery cannot be maintained with nothing. Or, if this be not ſo plauſible to your honorable infernalſhip, it might ſeeme good to your helhood to make extent vpon the ſoules of a number of vncharitable Cormorants, who, hauing incurd the daunger of a *Premunire* with medling with matters that properly concerne your owne perſon, deſerue no longer to liue (as men) amongſt men, but to bee incorporated in the ſociety of diuels. By which meanes the mightie controller of fortune and imperious ſubuerter of deſteny, delicious gold, the poore mans God, and Idoll of Princes (that lookes pale and wanne through long impriſonment) might at length be reſtored to his powrfull Monarchie, and eftſoon bee ſette at liberty, to helpe his friends that haue neede of him.

I knowe a great ſort of good fellowes that would venture farre for his freedom,* and a number of needy Lawyers (who now mourn in threed-bare gownes for his thraldome) that would goe neere to poiſon his keepers with falſe Latine, if that might procure his enlargement: but inexorable yron detaines him in the dungeon of the night, ſo that (poore creature)

* Id est, for the fredome of gold.

hee can neither traffique with the Mercers and Tailers as he was wont, nor dominere in Tauernes as he ought.

Famine, Lent, and deſſolation, ſit in onyonſkind iackets before the doore of his indurance, as a *Chorus* in the Tragedy of Hoſpitality, to / tell hunger & pouerty thers no reliefe for them there: and in the inner part of this vgly habitation ſtands Greedineſſe, prepared to deuoure all that enter, attyred in a Capouch of written parchment, buttond downe before with Labels of waxe, and lin'd with ſheepes fells for warmenes: his Cap furd with cats ſkinnes, after the Muſcouie faſhion, and all to be taſſeld with Angle-hookes, in ſtead of Aglets, ready to catch hold of all thoſe to whom hee ſhewes any humblenes: for his breeches, they were made of the liſts of broad cloaths, which he had by letters pattents aſſured him and his heyres, to the vtter ouerthrowe of Bowcaſes and cuſhin makers, and bumbaſted they were, like Beere barrels, with ſtatute Marchants and forfeytures: but of all, his ſhooes were the ſtrangeſt, which, being nothing elſe but a couple of crab ſhells, were toothd at the toes with two ſharp ſixpennie nailes, that digd vp euery dunghill they came by for gold, and ſnarld at the ſtones as hee went in the ſtreet, becauſe they weare ſo common for men, women, and children, to

The deſcription of Gredines.

tread vpon, and hee could not deuife how to wreft an odde fine out of any of them.

Thus walks hee vp and downe all his life time, with an yron crow in his hand inftead of a ftaffe, and a Sariants Mace in his mouth, (which night and day he gnaws vpon) and either bufies himfelfe in fetting filuer lime twigs, to entangle yoong Gentlemen, and cafting foorth filken fhraps, to catch Woodcocks, or in fyuing of Muckehills and fhop-duft, whereof he will boult a whole cartload to gaine a bowd Pinne.

The description of Dame Niggerdize.

On the other fide, Dame Niggardize, his wife, in a fedge rugge kirtle, that had beene a mat time out of minde, a courfe hempen raile about her fhoulders, borrowed of the one end of a hop-bag, an apron made of Almanackes out of date, (fuch as ftand vpon fcreens, or on the backfide of a dore in a Chandlers fhop) & an old wiues pudding pan on her head, thrumd with the parings of her nailes, fate barrelling vp the droppings of her nofe, in fteede of oyle, to faime wool withall, and would not aduenture to fpit without halfe a dozen of porrengers at her elbow.

The houfe, (or rather the hell) where thefe two Earthwormes encaptiued this beautifull Subftaunce, was vaft, large, ftrong built, and well furnifhed, all faue the Kitchin : for that was no bigger than the

Cooks roome in a ſhip, with a little court chimney, about the compaſſe of a *Parentheſis* in proclamation-print: then iudge you what dim / inutiue diſhes came out of this doues-neaſt. So likewiſe, of the Buttrie: for whereas in houſes of ſuch ſtately foundation, that are built to outward ſhewe ſo magnificent, euery Office is anſwerable to the Hall, which is principall, there the Buttrie was no more but a blind Cole-houſe, vnder a paire of ſtayres, wherein (vpriſing & down lying) was but one ſingle kilderkin of ſmall beere, that wold make a man, with a carrouſe of a ſpooneful, runne through an Alphabet of faces. Nor vſd they any glaſſes or cups (as other men), but onely little farthing ounce boxes, whereof one of them fild vp with froath (in manner and forme of an Ale-houſe) was a meales allowance for the whole houſhold. It were lamentable to tell what miſerie the Rattes and Myce endured in this hard world: how, when all ſupply of vitualls failed them, they went a Boot-haling one night to Sinior Greedineſſe bed-chamber, where finding nothing but emptines and vaſtitie, they encountred (after long inquiſitiō) with a cod-peece, well dunged & manured with greace (which my pinch-fart penie-father had retaind from his Bachelorſhip, vntill the eating of theſe preſents). Vppon that they ſet, and with a couragious aſſault rent it cleane away from the

breeches, and then carried it in triumph, like a coffin, on their ſhoulders betwixt them. The verie ſpiders and duſt weauers, that wont to ſet vp their loomes in euery windowe, decaied and vndone through the extreame dearth of the place, (that affoorded them no matter to worke on) were conſtrained to breake, againſt their wills, and goe dwell in the countrey, out of the reach of the broome and the wing: and generally, not a flea nor a cricket that carried anie braue minde, that would ſtay there after he had once taſted the order of their fare. Onely vnfortunate golde (a predeſtinat ſlaue to drudges and fooles) liues in endleſſe bondage ther amongſt them, and may no way be releaſt, except you ſend the rot halfe a yeare amongſt his keepers, and ſo make them away with a murrion, one after another.

The complaynt of Pryde.

O but a far greater enormitie raigneth in the heart of the Court: Pride, the peruerter of all Vertue, ſitteth appareled in the Merchants ſpoiles, and ruine of yoong Citizens, and ſcorneth Learning, that gaue their vp-ſtart Fathers titles of Gentry.

The nature of an vpstart.

All malcontent ſits the greaſie ſonne of a Cloathier, and complaines (like a decaied Earle) of the ruine of ancient houſes: whereas, the Weauers loomes firſt framed the web of his honour, and the locks/of wool,

that bufhes and brambles haue tooke for toule of infolent fheepe, that would needs ftriue for the wall of a fir-bufh, haue made him of the tenths of their tarre, a Squier of low degree: and of the collections of the fcatterings, a Juftice, *Tam Marti quam Mercurio*, of Peace and of Coram. Hee will bee humorous, forfoth, and haue a broode of fafhions by himfelfe. Sometimes (becaufe Loue commonly weares the liuerey of Witte) hee will be an *Inamorato Poeta*, and fonnet a whole quire of paper in praife of Lady Swin-fnout, his yeolow-fac'd Miftres, and weare a feather of her rain-beaten fanne for a fauor, like a fore-horfe. Al *Italionato* is his talke, and his fpade peake is as fharpe as if he had been a Pioner before the walles of *Roan*. Hee will defpife the barbarifme of his owne Countrey, and tell a whole Legend of lyes of his trauailes vnto *Conftan-tinople*. If he be challenged to fight, for his delaterye excufe, hee ob-iects that it is not the cuftome of the Spaniard, or the Germaine, to looke backe to euery dog that barkes. You fhall fee a dapper Jacke, that hath beene but ouer at *Deepe*, wring his face round about, as a man would ftirre vp a muftard pot, and talke Englifh through the teeth, like *Iaques Scabd-hams*, or *Monfieur Mingo de Mouftrap*: when (poore flaue) he hath but dipt his bread in wilde Boares greace, and come home againe: or beene

bitten by the ſhinnes by a Wolfe: and ſaith, he hath aduentured vppon the Barricadoes of *Gurney*, or *Guingan*, and fought with the yoong Guiſe hand to hand.

The counterfeit polititian.

Some thinke to be counted rare Politicians and Stateſmen, by beeing ſolitary: as who ſhould ſay, I am a wiſe man, a braue man, *Secreta mea mihi: Fruſtra ſapit, qui ſibi non ſapit:* and there is no man worthy of my companie or friendſhip: when, although he goes vngartred like a malecontent Cutpurſſe, and weares his hat ouer his eies like one of the curſed crue, yet cannot his ſtabbing dagger, or his nittie loue-locke, keepe him out of the Legend of fantaſticall cockſcombs. I pray ye, good Mounſier Diuell, take ſome order, that the ſtreetes be not peſtered with them ſo as they are. Is it not a pitiful thing that a fellow that eates not a good meales meat in a weeke, but beggereth his belly quite and cleane, to make his backe a certaine kind of a brokerly Gentleman: and nowe & then (once or twice in a Tearme) comes / to the eighteene pence Ordenary, becauſe hee would be ſeen amongſt Caualiers and braue courtyers, liuing otherwiſe all the yeere long with ſalt Butter & Holland cheeſe in his chamber, ſhould take vppe a ſcornfull melancholy in his gate & countenance, courſe & talke, as though our common-welth were but a mockery of gouern-

ment, and our Maieſtrates fooles, who wronged him in not looking into his deſerts, not imploying him in State matters, and that, if more regard were not had of him very ſhortly, the whole Realme ſhould haue a miſſe of him, & he would go (I mary would he) where he ſhould be more accounted off.

Is it not wonderfull ill-prouided, I ſay, that this diſdainfull companion is not made one of the fraternity of Foole, to talke before great States, with ſome olde mothe-eaten Polititian, of mending high waies, and leading Armies into Fraunce?

A young Heyre, or Cockney, that is his Mothers Darling, if hee haue playde the waſte-good at the Innes of the Court, or about London, and that neither his Students penſion, nor his vnthriftes credite, will ſerue to maintaine his Collidge of whores any longer, falles in a quarrelling humor with his fortune, becauſe ſhe made him not King of the *Indies*, and ſweares and ſtares, after ten in the hundreth, that nere a ſuch Peſant, as his Father or brother, ſhall keepe him vnder: hee will to the ſea, and teare the gold out of the Spaniards throats, but he will haue it, byrladie: And when he comes there, poore ſoule, hee lyes in brine, in Baliſt, and is lamentable ſicke of the ſcurvies: his daintie fare is turned to a hungry feaſt of Dogs and Cats, or Haberdine and poore John, at the

The prodigall yoong Master.

moſt, and which is lamentableſt of all, that without Muſtard.

As a mad Ruffion, on a time, being in daunger of ſhipwrack by a tempeſt, and ſeeing all other at their vowes and praiers, that if it would pleaſe God, of his infinite goodneſſe, to delyuer them out of that imminent daunger, one woulde abiure this ſinne wherevnto he was adicted: an other, make ſatisfaction for that vyolence he had committed: he, in a deſperate ieſt, began thus to reconcile his ſoule to heauen.

O Lord, if it may ſeeme good to thee to deliuer me from this feare of vntimely death, I vowe before thy Throne, and all thy ſtarry Hoſt, neuer to eate Haberdine more whileſt I liue.

Well, ſo it fell out, that the / Sky cleared and the tempeſt ceaſed, and this careleſſe wretch, that made ſuch a mockery of praier, readie to ſet foote a Land, cryed out: not without Muſtard, good Lord, not without Muſtard: as though it had been the greateſt torment in the world, to haue eaten Haberdine without Muſtard. But this by the way, what pennance can be greater for Pride, than to let it ſwinge in hys owne halter? *Dulce bellum inexpertis:* theres no man loues the ſmoake of his owne Countrey, that hath not been ſyngde in the flame of an other ſoyle. It is a pleaſant thing, ouer a full pot, to read the fable of thirſtie

Tantalus: but a hard matter to difgeft falt meates at Sea, with ftinking water.

Another mifery of Pride it is, when men that haue good parts, and beare the name of deepe fcholers, cannot be content to participate one faith with all Chriftendome, but, becaufe they will get a name to their vaineglory, they will fet their felfe-loue to ftudy to inuent new fects of fingularitie, thinking to liue when they are dead, by hauing theyr fects called after their names, as *Donatifts* of *Donatus*, *Arrians* of *Arrius*, & a number more new faith-founders, that haue made *England* the exchange of Innouations, & almoft afmuch confufion of Religion in euery Quarter, as there was of tongues at the building of the Tower of *Babell*. Whence, a number that fetch the Articles of their Beleefe out of *Ariftotle*, & thinke of heauen and hell as the Heathen Philofophers, take occafion to deride our Ecclefiafticall State, & all Ceremonies of Diuine worfhip, as bug-beares and fcar-crowes, becaufe (like *Herodes* fouldiers) we diuide Chrifts garment amongft vs in fo many peeces, and of the vefture of faluation make fome of vs Babies & apes coates, others ftraight truffes & Diuells breeches: fome gally-gafcoines, or a fhipmans hofe, like the Anabaptifts & adulterous Familifts: others with the Martinifts, a hood with two faces, to hide their

The pride of the learned.

hypocrifie: and, to conclude, fome, like the Barrowifts and Greenwodians, a garment full of the plague, which is not to be worne before it be new wafht.

Hence Atheifts triumph and reioyce, and talke as prophanely of the Bible, as of Beuis of Hampton. I heare fay there be Mathematitions abroad that will prooue men before *Adam*, and they are harboured in high places, who will maintaine it to the death, that there are no diuells.

It is a fhame (fenior *Belzibub*!) that you fhould fuffer your felfe thus / to be tearmed a baftard, or not approue to your predeftinate children, not only that they haue a father, but that you are hee that muft owne them. Thefe are but the fuburbes of the finne we haue in hand: I muft defcribe to you a large cittie, wholy inhabited with this damnable enormitie.

The diuell hath children (as other men), but fewe of them know their owne father.

In one place let me fhewe you a bafe Artificer that hath no reuenues to boaft on but a Needle in his bofome, as braue as any Penfioner or Nobleman.

The pride of Artificers.

In an other corner, Miftris Minx, a Marchants wife, that wil eate no cherries, forfooth, but when they are at twenty fhillings a pound, that lookes as fimperingly as if fhe were befmeard, & iets it as gingerly as if fhe

The pride of marchants wiues.

were dancing the Canaries: ſhe is ſo finicall in her ſpeach, as though ſhe ſpake nothing but what ſhe had firſt ſewd ouer before in her Samplers, and the puling accent of her voyce is like a fained treble, or ones voyce that interprets to the puppets. What ſhould I tell how ſqueamiſh ſhe is in her dyet, what toyle ſhe puts her poore ſeruants vnto, to make her looking glaſſes in the pauement? how ſhe wil not goe into the fields, to cowre on the greene graſſe, but ſhee muſt haue a Coatch for her convoy: and ſpends halfe a day in pranking her ſelfe if ſhe be inuited to anie ſtrange place? Is not this the exceſſe of pride, ſignior Sathan? Goe too, you are vnwiſe, if you make her not a chiefe Saint in your Calender.

The next obiect that encounters my eyes, in ſome ſuch obſcure vpſtart gallants, as without deſert or ſeruice, are raiſed from the plough to be checkmate with Princes: and theſe I can no better compare than to creatures that are bred *Sine coitu*, as crickets in chimnyes: to which I reſemble poore Scullians, that, from turning ſpit in the chimney corner, are on the ſodaine hoiſed vp from the Kitchin into the waiting chamber, or made Barons of the beanes, and Marqueſſes of the mary-boanes: ſome by corrupt water, as gnats, to which we may liken Brewers, that, by retayling filthy *Thames* water, come in few

The pride of pesants sprung vp of nothing.

yeres to be worth fortie or fiftie thoufand pound: others by dead wine, as little flying wormes: and fo the Vintners in like cafe: others by flime, as frogs, which may be alluded to Mother *Bunches* flimie ale, that hath made her, & fome other of her fil-pot family fo wealthy: others by dirt, as worms: and fo I know many gold-finers & hoftlers come vp: fome by hearbs, as cankers, & after the fame fort our Apothecaries: others by afhes, as *Scarabes*: and how / elfe get our Colliers the pence? Others from the putrified flefh of dead beafts, as Bees of Bulls, & butchers by fly-blowne beefe, wafpes of horfes, and Hackney-men by felling their lame iades to hunts-men, for carrion.

Sparagus a flowre that neuer groweth but through mans dong.

Yet am I not againft it, that thefe men by their mechanicall trades fhould come to be *fparage* gen-tlemen & chuff-headed Burghomafters: but that better places fhould bee pos-feffed by coyftrells, & the Coblers crowe, for crying but *aue Cæfar*, be more efteemed than rarer birds, that haue warbled fweeter notes vnrewarded. But it is no meruaile: for as Hemlocke fatteth Quailes, & Henbane Swine, which to al other is poyfon, fo fome mens vices haue power to aduance them, which would fubuert any elfe that fhould feeke to climbe by them: and it is inough in them, that they can pare their nailes well, to get them a liuing, when

as the ſeauen liberall Sciences & a good leg, will ſcarſe get a paire of ſhoos and a Canuas-dublet.

Theſe whelpes of the firſt litter of Gentilitie, theſe Exhalations, drawen vp to the heauen of honor from the dunghil of abiect fortune, haue long been on horſebacke to come riding to your Diuelſhip: but, I know not how, like Saint *George*, they are alwaies moũted, but neuer moue. Here they out-face Towne & countrey, & doo nothing but bandy factions with their betters. Their bigge limbes yeeld the Common-wealth no other ſeruice but idle ſweate, & their heads, like rough hewen Gloabes, are fit for nothing but to be the block-houſes for ſleepe. *Raynard*, the Fox, may well beare vp his taile in the Lions denne, but when he comes abroad, he is afraide of euery dogge that barkes. What curre will not bawle, & be ready to flye in a mans face, when he is ſet on by his maſter, who, if hee bee not by to encourage him, he caſts his taile betwixt his legges, & ſteales away like a ſheepe byter. *Vliſſes* was a tall man vnder *Aiax* ſhield: but by himſelfe hee would neuer aduenture but in the night. Pride is neuer built but vppon ſome pillers : & let his ſupporters faile him neuer ſo little, you ſhall finde him very humble in ẏ dust. Wit oftentimes ſtands in ſtead of a chiefe arche to vnderprop it, in ſoldiers ſtrẽgth, in womẽ beauty.

Drudges, that haue no extraordinarie giftes of body nor of minde, filche themſelues into ſome Noble mans ſeruice, either by bribes or by flattery, and, when they are there, they ſo labour it with cap & knee, and ply it with priuie whiſperinges, that they wring themſelues into his good opinion ere he be a ware. Then, doo they vaunt themſelues / ouer the common multitude, and are readie to braue anie man that ſtands by himſelfe. Their Lords authoritie is as a rebater to beare vp the Peacockes taile of their boaſting, and any thing that is ſaid or done to the vnhandſoming of their ambition is ſtraight wreſted to the name of treaſon. Thus do weedes grow vp whiles no man regards them, and the Ship of Fooles is arriued in the Hauen of Felicitie, whileſt the Scoutes of Enuie contemne the attempts of any ſuch ſmall Barkes.

The base insinuating of drudges, & their practise to aspyre.

But beware you that be great mens Fauorites: let not a ſeruile, inſinuating ſlaue, creepe betwixt your legges into credit with your Lords: for peſants that come out of the colde of pouertie, once cheriſht in the boſome of proſperitie, will ſtraight forget that euer there was a winter of want, or who gaue them room to warme them. The ſon of a churle cannot chooſe but prooue ingrateful, like his Father. Truſt not a villaine that hath beene miſerable, and is ſodainly grown happie.

Vertue aſcendeth by degrees of deſert into dignitie: gold & luſt may lead a man a nearer way to pro-motion: but he that hath neither comelineſſe nor coine to commend him, vndoubtedly* ſtrydes ouer time by ſtratagems,* if of a moale-hil he grows to a mountaine in a moment. This is that which I vrge: there is no friendſhipe to bee had with him that is reſolute to doe or ſuffer any thing rather than to endure the deſtenie whereto he was borne: for he will not ſpare his owne Father or Brother, to make himſelfe a Gentleman.

* As by carrying tales, or playing the douty Pandor.

Fraunce, *Italy*, and *Spaine*, are all full of theſe falſe hearted *Machiuillians*; but properly Pride is the diſeaſe of the Spaniard, who is born a Bragart in his mothers womb: for, if he be but 17 yeers old, and hath come to the place where a Field was fought, (though halfe a yeare before) he then talks like one of the Giants that made warre againſt Heauen, and ſtands vppon his honor, as much as if he were one of *Auguſtus* Souldiers, of whom he firſt inſtituted the order of Heralds: and let a man ſooth him in this vaine of kilcowe vanitie, you may commaund his hart out of his belly, to make you a raſher on the coales, if you will next your heart.

The pride of the Spanyard.

The Italian is a more cunning proud fellowe, and hides his humour farre cleanlier, and indeed ſeemes

to take a pride in humilitie, & will profer a ſtraunger more courteſie than hee meanes to performe. Hee hateth him deadly that takes him at his word: as, for example, if vpon an occaſion of meeting, he requeſt you to dinner or ſupper at his houſe, / and that at the firſt or ſecond intreatie you promiſe to bee his gueſt, he will be the mortalſt enemie you haue: but if you deny him, he will thinke you haue manners and good bringing vp, and will loue you as his brother: marry, at the third or fourth time you muſt not refuſe him. Of al things he counteth it a mighty diſgrace to haue a man paſſe juſtling by him in haſt on a narrowe cauſey, and aſke him no leaue, which he neuer reuengeth with leſſe then a ſtab.

The pride of the Italian.

The Frenchman (not altered from his owne nature) is wholle compact of deceiuable Courtſhip, and for the moſt part, loues none but himſelfe and his pleaſure: yet though he be the moſt *Grand Signeur* of them all, he will ſay, *A voſtre ſeruice & commandemente Mounſeur*, to the meaneſt vaſſaile he meets. Hee thinkes he doth a great fauour to that gentleman, or follower of his, to whom hee talks ſitting on his cloſe ſtoole: and with that fauour (I haue heard) the Princes wonted to grace the Noble men of *France*: and a great man of their Nation comming in time paſt ouer into *England*, and beeing here very honorably

The pride of the frenchman.

receiued, he in requital of his admirable entertainment, on an euening going to the priuie, (as it were to honour extraordinarily our Englifh Lords, appointed to attend vpon him) gaue one the candle, another his girdle, & another the paper: but they (not acquainted with this newe kinde of gracing) accompanying him to the pryuie dore, fet downe the trafh, and fo left him: which he, confidering what ineftimable kindnes he extended to them therin more than vfual, tooke very hainoufly.

The moft groffe and fenceleffe proud dolts (in a difference from all thefe kinds) are the Danes, who ftand fo much vpon their vnweldy burliboand fouldiery, that they account of no man that hath not a battle Axe at his girdle to hough dogs with, or weares not a cockes feather in a thrumd hat like a caualier: briefly, he is the beft foole bragart vnder heauen. For befides nature hath lent him a flaberkin face, like one of the foure winds, and cheeks that fag like a womans dugs ouer his chin-bone, his apparel is fo ftuft vp with bladders of Taffatie, and his back like biefe ftuft with Parfly, fo drawne out with Ribands and deuifes, and blifterd with light farcenet baftings, that you would thinke him nothing but a fwarme of Butterflies, if you faw him a far off.* Thus walkes hee vp and downe in his Maiefty, taking a yard of

The pride of the dane.

* If you know him not by any of these

marks, look on his fingers, & you shal be sure to find half a dozen siluer rings, worth three pence a peece.

ground at euery ſtep, and ſtamps on the earth ſo terrible, as if he ment to knocke vppe a ſpirite, when (foule drunken bezzle) if an Engliſh/man ſet his little finger to him, he falles like a hogs-trough that is ſet on one end. Therfore, I am the more vehement againſt them, becauſe they are an arrogant Aſſe-headed people, that naturally hate learning, and all them that loue it: yea, & for they would vtterly roote it out from among them, they haue with-drawen al rewards from the Profeſſors thereof. Not *Barbary* it ſelfe is halfe ſo barbarous as they are.

The Danes enemies to al learning.

Firſt, whereas the hope of honour maketh a Souldior in *England*: Byſhopricks, Deanries, Prebendaries, and other priuate dignities, animate our Diuines to ſuch excellence: the ciuill Lawyers haue their degrees & conſiſtories of honour by themſelues, equal in place with Knights and Eſquiers: the common Lawyers (ſuppoſe in the beginning they are but huſbandmens ſons) come in time to be chiefe Fathers of the land, and manie of them not the meaneſt of the Priuie Counſell.

There, the ſouldiour may fight himſelfe out of his ſkinne, and do more exploits than hee hath doyts in his purſe, before from a common Mercenary he come to be Corporal of the mould cheeſe: or the Lieutennant

No rewards amongst them for desert.

get a Captainſhip. None but the ſon of a Corporall muſt be a Corporall, nor any be Captaine, but the lawfull begotten of a Captaines body. Biſhops, Deans, Prebendaries, why they know no ſuch functions: a ſort of ragged Miniſters they haue, of whom they count as baſely, as water-bearers. If any of the Noblemen refrain three howers in his life time from drinking, to ſtudy the Lawes, hee may perhaps haue a little more gouernment put into his hands than an other: but, otherwiſe, Burgomaſters & Gentlemen beare all the ſway of both ſwords, ſpiritual and temporall. It is death there for anie but a huſbandman to marry a huſbandmans daughter, or a Gentlemans childe to ioyne with any but the ſonne of a Gentleman. Marry this, the king may well baniſh, but hee cannot put a Gentleman vnto death in any cauſe whatſoeuer, which makes them ſtand vppon it ſo proudly as they doe. For faſhion ſake ſome will put their children to ſchoole, but they ſet them not to it till they are foureteene yeere old: ſo that you ſhall ſee a great boy with a beard learne his A B C, and ſit weeping vnder the rod, when he is thirtie yeeres old.

What it is to make labor without hope.

I will not ſtand to inferre what a preiudice it is to the thrift of a floriſhing State, to poyſon the groth of glory, by giuing it nought but the puddle water of penury to drinke:

to clippe the winges of a high towring Faulcon, who, wheras ſhe wont in her fethered youthfulneſſe, to looke with an amiable eye on her gray breaſt, and her ſpeckled ſide ſayles, all ſinnowed with ſiluer quilles, and to dryue whole Armies of fearefull foules before her to her maiſters Table ; now ſhe ſits ſadly on the ground, picking of wormes, mourning the crueltie of thoſe vngentleman-like idle hands, that diſmembreth the beauty of her trayne

You all knowe that man (inſomuch as hee is the Image of God) delighteth in honour and worſhip, and all holy Writ warrantes that delight, ſo it bee not derogatory to any part of Gods owne worſhip. Now, take away that delight, a diſcontented idleneſſe ouertakes him. For his hire, any handycraft man, be he Carpenter Joyner or Painter, will ploddingly do his day-labor : but to adde credit and fame to his workmanſhip, or to winne a maiſtery to himſelfe aboue all other, hee will make a further aſſay in his trade than euer hitherto he did : hee will haue a thouſand flouriſhes, which before he neuer thought vppon, and in one day ridde more out of hand, than earſt he did in ten : So in Armes, ſo in Arts : if titles of fame and glory be propoſed to forward minds, or that any ſoueraigntie (whoſe ſweetnes they haue not yet felt) be ſet in likely view for them to ſore too, they will make a ladder

of cord of the links of their braines, but they will faften their handes, as wel as their eies, on the imaginatiue bliffe, which they already enioy by admiration. Experience reproues me for a foole, for delating on fo manifeft a cafe.

The Danes are burften-bellied fots, that are to be confuted with nothing but Tankards or quart pots, and *Ouid* might as wel haue read his verfes to the *Getes* that vnderftood him not, as a man talke reafon to them that haue no eares but their mouths, nor fenfe but of that which they fwallow downe their throats. God fo loue me, as I loue the quicke-witted Italians, and therefore loue them the more, becaufe they mortally deteft this furley fwinifh Generation.

And that sence often times maketh them sence-lesse.

I need not fetch colours from other countries to paint the vglie vifage of Pride, fince her picture is fet forth in fo many painted faces here at home. What drugs, what forceries, what oiles, what waters, what oyntments, doe our curious Dames vfe to inlarge our withered * beauties. Their lips are as lauifhly red, as if they vfed to kiffe an okerman euery morning, and their cheeks fuger-candied & cherry blufht fo fweetly after the colour * of a newe Lord Mayors poftes, as if the pageant of their wedlocke holiday

* Withered flowers need much watering.

* And will indure all wethers as wel as they. They may well be called counterfaites, since the beauty they imitate is counterfeyted.

were harde at the doore: ſo / that if a Painter were to drawe any of their counterfets on a Table, he needes no more but wet his pencill, and dab it on their cheekes, and he ſhall haue vermillion and white enough to furniſh out his worke, though he leaue his tar-boxe at home behinde him. Wiſe was that ſin-waſhing Poet that made the Ballet of Blue ſtarch and poaking ſtick, for indeed the * lawne of licentiouſneſſe hath conſumed all the wheate of hoſpitalitie. It is ſaid, Laurence Lucifer, that you went vp and downe London crying there like a lanterne and candle man. I meruaile no Laundreſſe would giue you the waſhing and ſtarching of your face for your labour, for God knowes it is as blacke as the blacke Prince.

* Marke these two letter-leaping Metaphors, good people. So saieth the learned Polihistor Rimerus, in his first booke, first page, & first line of his Ballad of blew starch and poaking stickes.

It is ſuſpected you haue been a great *tobacco*-taker * in your youth, which cauſeth it to come ſo to paſſe: but Dame Nature, your nurſe, was partly in fault, elſe ſhe might haue remedied it. * She ſhould haue noynted your face ouer night with *Lac virginis*, which, baking vpon it in bed till the morning, ſhe might haue pild off the ſcale like the ſkin of a cuſtard, and making a poſſet of vergis mixt with the oyle of Tartary and Camphire, and bathde it in it a

* The diuell a great Tobacca taker.

* A medicine to make the diuel faire.

quarter of an houre, and you had been as faire as the floure of the frying pan. I warrant, we haue old hackſters in this great Grandmother of Corporations, Madame *Troynouant*, that haue not backbited anie of their neighbours with the tooth of enuy this twentie yeare, in the wrinckles of whoſe face, yee may hide falſe dice, and play at cherry pit in the dint of their cheekes: yet theſe aged mothers of iniquitie will haue their deformities newe plaiſtered ouer, & weare noſegayes of yeolow haire on their furious foreheads, when age hath written, Hoe God, be here, on their bald burnt parchment pates. Piſh, piſh, what talke you of old age or balde pates? men & women that haue gone vnder the South pole,* muſt lay off their furde night-caps in ſpight of their teeth, & become yeomen of the Vineger bottle: a cloſe periwig hides al the ſinnes of an old whore-maſter; but *Cucullus non facit Monachum*,* tis not their newe bonnets will keepe them from the old boan-ach. Ware when a mans ſinnes are written on his ey-browes, and that there is not a haire bredth betwixt them and the falling ſicknes. The times are dangerous, & this is an yron age, or rather no yron age, for ſwords & bucklers goe to pawne a pace in Long lane: but a tinne age: for tinne and pewter are

He that wipes his nose, and hath it not, shall forfeit hys whole face.

* Alias, Mother Cornelius Meridian.

* Translated word for word, juxta originalem.

more efteemed than Latine. You that be wife, defpife it, abhorre it, neglect it, for what fhould a / man care for gold that cannot get it.

The commendation of Antequaries. Laudamus veteres, sed nostris utimur annis.

An Antiquarie is an honeft man, for he had rather fcrape a peece of copper out of the durt, than a crowne out of Ploidens ftandifh. I know manie wife Gentlemen of this mufty vocation, who out of loue with the times wherein they liue, fall a retailing of *Alexanders* ftirrops, becaufe (in veritie) there is not fuch a ftrong peece of ftretching leather made now adayes, nor yron fo well tempred for anie money. They will blow their nofe in a box, and fay it is the fpettle that *Diogenes* fpet in ones face: who beeing inuited to dinner to his houfe, that was neat and braue in all points as might be deuifed, & the grũting Dog, fomwhat troubled with the rheume (by meanes of his long fafting and ftaying for dinner more than wont), fpet full in his Hoftes face: and being afkt the reafon of it, faid, it was the fouleft place he could fpie out in all his houfe. Let their Miftres (or fome other woman) giue them a fether of her fanne for a fauor, & if one afk them what it is? they make anfwer, a plume of the Phenix, whereof there is but one in all the whole world. A thouıand guegawes and toyes haue they in their chambers, which they heape vp together, with infinite ex-

pence, and are made beleeue of them that ſel them, that they are rare & pretious things, when they haue gathered them vpon ſome dunghill, or rakte them out of the kennell by chaunce. I know one ſold an old rope with foure knots on it for foure pound, in that he gaue it out, it was the length and bredth of Chriſts Tombe. Let a Tinker take a peece of braſſe worth a halfpeny, and ſet ſtrange ſtamps on it, & I warrant he may make it more worth to him of ſome fantaſticall foole, than all the kettels that euer he mended in his life. This is the diſeaſe of our newfangled humoriſts, that know not what to doo with their welth. It argueth a verie ruſty wit, ſo to doate on worme-eaten Elde.

The complaint of Enuy.

Out vpon it, how long is Pride a dreſſing her ſelfe? Enuie, awake, for thou muſt appeare before *Nicalao Maleuolo*, great Muſter-maſter of hell. Marke you this ſlie mate, how ſmoothly hee lookes? The Poets were ill aduiſed that fained him to be a leane, gag-toothd Beldam, with hollow eyes, pale cheeks, and ſnakie haire: for he is not onely a man, but a iolly luſtie olde Gentleman, that will winke, and laugh, and ieaſt drily, as if he were the honeſteſt of a thouſand: and I warrant you ſhall not heare a foule word come from him in a yeare. I wi'l not contradict it, but the Dog may worry a ſheepe

in the dark, and / thruſt his necke into the collar of clemencie & pitie when he hath done: as who ſhoulde ſay, God forgiue him, hee was a ſleepe in the ſhambles, when the innocent was done to death. But openly, Enuie ſets a ciuil, fatherly countenaunce vpon it, & hath not ſo much as a drop of bloud in his face, to attaint him of murther. I thought it expedient, in this my Supplication, to place it next to Pride: for it is his adopted ſonne: And hence comes it, that proud men repine at others proſperitie, and greeue that any ſhould be great but themſelues. *Meus cujuſque, is eſt quiſque;* it is a Prouerbe that is as hoarie as Dutch-butter. If a man wil goe to the diuell, he may go to the diuel: there are a thouſand iugling tricks to be vſed at hey paſſe, come aloft: and the world hath cords enough to truſſe vp a calfe that ſtands in ones way. Enuie is a Crocodile that weeps when he kils, & fightes with none but he feeds on. This is the nature of this quickſighted monſter, hee wil endure any paines to endamage another: waſt his body with vndertaking exploites that would require ten mens ſtrengths, rather than any ſhould get a penny but himſelfe, bleare his eyes to ſtand in his neighbors light, and to conclude, like *Atlas* vnderproppe heauen, rather than any ſhould be in heauen that he likte not of, or come vnto heauen by any other meanes but by him.

You goodman wandrer about the world, how doe ye ſpende your time, that you do not rid vs of theſe peſtilent members? You are vnworthy to haue an office, if you can execute it no better. Behold another enemy of mankind, beſides thy ſelfe, exalted in the South, *Philip* of Spaine: who not contented to be the God of gold, and chiefeſt commander of content that Europe affords, but now he doth nothing but thirſt after humane bloud, when his foot is on the threſhold of the graue: and as a wolfe, beeing about to deuoure a horſe, doth baliſt his belly with earth, that he may hang the heauier vppon him, and then forcibly flies in his face, neuer leauing his hold till he hath eaten him vp: ſo this woluiſh vnnatural vſurper, being about to deuoure all Chriſtendome by inuaſion, doth cramme his treaſures with Indian earth to make his malice more forcible, and then flyes in the boſome of *France* & *Belgia*, neuer withdrawing his forces (as the Wolfe his faſtning) till he hath deuoured their welfare, & made the war-waſted carcaſes of both kingdoms a pray for his tyrannie. Onely poore *England* giues him bread for his cake, and holds him out at the arms end. His Armados (that like a high wood, ouer-ſhadowed the ſhrubbes of our / low ſhips) fled from the breath of our Cannons, as vapors before the Sunne, or as the

Phillip of Spayne as great an enemy to mankinde as the deuil.

Elephant flies from the Ramme, or the Sea-whale from the noyſe of parched bones. The winds, enuying that the aire ſhould be dimmed with ſuch a *Chaos* of wodden clowds, raiſed vp high bulwarks of bellowing waues, where Death ſhotte at their diſorderd Nauy: and the Rocks with their ouer-hanging iawes, eat vp all the fragments of oake that they left. So periſht our foes, ſo the Heauens did fight for vs. *Præterit Hippomenes, reſonant ſpectacula plauſis.*

I do not doubt (Doctor Diuell) but you were preſent in this action, or paſſion rather, and helpt to bore holes in ſhips to make them ſinke faſter; and rence out Galley-foiſts with ſalt water, that ſtunke like fuſtie barrels with their Maiſters feare. It will be a good while ere you do as much for the King, as you did for his ſubiects. I would haue ye perſwade an Armie of goutie Vſurers to goe to Sea vppon a boon voyage: trie if you can tempt Enuy to embarke himſelf in the mal'-aduenture, and leaue troubling the ſtreame, that Poets & good fellowes may drinke, & Souldiers ſing *Placebo*, that haue murmured ſo long at the waters of ſtrife.

But that wil neuer bee: for as long as Pride, Riot, and Whoredome are the companions of yoong Courtiers, they wil alwayes bee hungry, and ready to bite at euery Dog that hath a boane

giuen him beſide themſelues. Ieſu, what ſecret grudge and rancour raignes amongſt them, one being ready to diſpaire of himſelf, if he ſee ẏ Prince but giue his fellow a faire looke, or to die for griefe if he be put down in brauery neuer ſo litle. Yet this cuſtome haue our falſe harts fetcht from other countries, that they wil ſweare & proteſt loue, where they hate deadly, and ſmile on him moſt kindly, whoſe ſubuerſion in ſoule they haue vowed. *Fraus ſublimi regnat in aula.* Tis rare to finde a true frend in Kings Pallaces: either thou muſt be ſo miſerable that thou fall into the hands of ſcornful pitie, or thou canſt not eſcape the ſting of enuy. In one thought, aſſemble the famous men of all ages, and tel me which of them all ſate in the ſunſhine of his ſoueraignes grace, or wext great of low beginnings, but he was ſpite-blaſted, heaued at, & ill ſpoken of: and that of thoſe that bare them moſt countenance. But were enuy nought but words, it might ſeeme to be onely womens ſinne: but it hath a lewd mate hanging on his ſleeue, called Murther, a ſterne fellowe, that (like a Spanyard in fight) aymeth all at / the heart: hee hath more ſhapes than *Proteus*, and will ſhifte himſelfe, vppon any occaſion of reuengement, into a man's diſh, his drinke, his apparell, his rings, his ſtirrops, his noſegay.

Murder, the companion of Enuie.

O Italie, the Academie of manflaughter, the fporting place of murther, the Apothecary-fhop of poyfon for all Nations: how many kind of weapons haft thou inuented for malice? Suppofe I loue a mans wife, whofe hufband yet liues, and cannot enioy her for his iealous ouerlooking: Phificke, or rather, the art of murther, (as it may be vfed) will lend one a Medicine, which fhal make him away, in the nature of that difeafe hee is moft fubiect to, whether in the fpace of a yeare, a moneth, halfe a yeere, or what tract of time you will, more or leffe.

Italie the store-house of all murderous inventions.

In Rome the Papall Chayre is wafht, euery fiue yeere at the furtheft, with this oyle of Aconitum. I pray God, the King of Spayne feafted not our holy father *Sextus*, that was laft, with fuch conferue of Henbane: for it was credibly reported hee loued him not, and this, that is now, is a God made with his owne hands: as it may appeare by the *Pafquil* that was fet vp of him, in manner of a note, prefently after his election, *Sol. Re. Me. Fa.* that is to fay, *Solus Rex me facit;* onely the K. of Spaine made me Pope. I am no Chronicler from our owne Countrey, but if probable fufpition might bee heard vpon his oath, I thinke fome mens foules would bee canonized for Martyrs, that on the earth did fway it as Monarchies.

The Pasquil that was made vpon this last Pope.

As Cardinal Wolsey, for example.

Is it your will and pleaſure (noble *Lants-graue* of *Lymbo*) to let vs haue leſſe carouſing to your health in poiſon, fewer vnder-hand conſpirings, or open quarrels executed onely in wordes, as they are in the worlde now a dayes: as if men will needs carouſe, conſpire, and quarrell, that they may make Ruffians hall of Hell: and there bandy balls of Brimſtone at one anothers head, and not trouble our peaceable Paradiſe with their priuate hurliburlies about ſtrumpets, where no weapon (as in *Adams* Paradiſe) ſhold be named: but onely the Angell of prouidence ſtand with a fiery ſword at the gate, to keep out our enemies.

The complaint of Wrath, a branch of Enuie.

A Perturbation of mind (like vnto Enuy) is Wrath, which looketh farre lower than the former: For, whereas Enuie cannot be ſaide to bee but in reſpect of our Superiours, Wrath reſpecteth no degrees nor perſons, but is equally armed agaynſt all that offende him. / A harebraind little Dwarfe it is, with a ſwarth viſage, that hath his hart at his tongues end, if he be contraride, and will be ſure to do no right nor take no wrong. If hee bee a Iudge or a Iuſtice (as ſometimes the Lyon comes to giue ſentence againſt the Lamb), then he ſweares by nothing but by Saint Tyborne, & makes Newgate a Noune Subſtantiue, whereto

Little men for the most part are most angry.

Newgate, a common name for al prisons, as Homo is a

common name for a man or a woman. all his other words are but Adiectiues. Lightly, hee is an olde man: (for thofe yeares are moft wayward and teatifh) yet be he neuer fo old or fo froward, fince Auarice likewife is a fellow vice of thofe fraile yeares, we muft fet one extreame to ftriue with another, and alay the anger of oppreffion by the fweet incenfe of a newe purfe of angels: or the doting Planet may haue fuch predominance in thefe wicked Elders of *Ifrael*, that, if you fend your wife, or fome other female, to plead for you, fhe may get your pardon vpon promife of better acquaintance. But whift, thefe are the workes of darkneffe, and may not be talkt of in the day time: Fury is a heate or fire, & muft bee quencht with maides water.

A tale of a wise Iustice.

Amongft other cholericke wife Iuftices, he was one, that hauing a play prefented before him and his Townefhip by *Tarlton* and the reft of his fellowes, her Maiefties feruants, and they were now entring into their firft merriment (as they call it), the people began exceedingly to laugh, when *Tarlton* firft peept out his head. Whereat the Iuftice, not a little moued, and feeing with his beckes and nods, hee could not make them ceafe, he went with his ftaffe, & beat them round about vnmercifully on the bare pates, in that they, being but Farmers and poore countrey hyndes, would prefume to laugh at the Queenes

men, & make no more account of her cloath in his preſence.

The cauſes conducting vnto wrath are as diuers as the actions of a mans life. Some will take on like a mad man, if they ſee a pigge come to the table. *Sotericus*, the Surgeon, was cholericke at ſight of Sturgeon. The Iriſhman will draw his dagger, and bee ready to kill & ſlay, if one breake winde in his company : and ſo ſome of our Engliſh men, that be Souldiers, if one giue them the lye : but theſe are light matters, whereof *Pierce* complaineth not.

The nature of the Irish man.

Be aduertiſed, Maſter *Os fœtidum*, Bedle of the Blackeſmithes, that Lawyers cannot deuiſe which way in the world to begge, they are ſo troubled with brabblements and ſutes euery Tearme, of Yeomen and Gentlemen that fall out for nothing. If *Iohn a Nokes* his henne doo but leap into *Elizabeth de Gappes* cloſe, ſhee will neuer / leaue to haunt her huſband, till he bring it to a *Niſi prius*. One while, the Parſon ſueth the pariſhioner for bringing home his tythes: another while, the Pariſhioner ſueth the Parſon for not taking away his Tythes in time.

I heard a tale of a Butcher, who driuing two Calues ouer a Common, that were coupled together by the neckes with an Oken With, in the way where they ſhould

A merry tale of a Butcher & his Calues.

paſſe, there lay a poore, leane Mare, with a galde backe: to whom they comming (as chance fell out), one of one ſide, and the other of the other, ſmelling on her, (as their manner is) the midſt of the With that was betwixt their necks rubd her and grated her on the ſore backe, that ſhee ſtarted and roſe vp, and hung them both on her backe as a beame: which, being but a rough plaiſter to her raw vlcer, ſhe ran away with them (as ſhe were frantick) into the Fens, where the Butcher could not follow them, and drownde both her ſelfe and them in a Quagmyre. Now, the owner of the Mare is in law with the Butcher for the loſſe of his Mare, and the Butcher enter-changably endites him for his Calues. I pray ye, Timothy Tempter, be an Arbitrator betwixt them, & couple them both by the neckes, (as the Calues were) and carry them to Hel on your backe, and then, I hope, they wyll be quiet.

The chiefe ſpur vnto wrath is Drunkennes, which, as the touch of an Aſhen bough, cauſeth a gidineſſe in the Vipers head, and the Batte, lightly ſtrooke with the leafe of a Tree, loſeth his remembrance: ſo they, being but lightly ſprinckled with the iuyce of the Hop, become ſenceleſſe, and haue their reaſon ſtrooken blind, as ſoone as euer the Cup ſcaleth the Fortreſſe of their Noſe. Then run their words at random, like a dog that hath

loſt his maſter, and are vppe with this man & that man, & generally inuey againſt al mẽ: but thoſe that keep a wet corner for a friend, and will not thinke ſcorne to drinke with a good fellowe and a Souldiour: & ſo long do they practiſe this vaine on their Ale-bench, that when they are ſober, they cannot leaue it. There be thoſe that get their liuing all the yeere long, by nothing but rayling.

A tale of one Fryer Charles a foule mouthde knaue.

Not farre from *Cheſter*, I knewe an odde foule-mouthde knaue, called *Charles* the Fryer, that had a face ſo parboyled with mens ſpitting on it, and a backe ſo often knighted in Bridewell, that it was impoſſible for any ſhame or puniſhment to terrifie him from ill ſpeaking. Noblemen hee would liken to more vgly things than himſelfe: ſome / to Alter my moſt hearty commendations, with a daſh ouer the head: others to guilded chines of beefe, or a ſhoomaker ſweating, when he puls on a ſhoo: another to an old verſe in *Cato, Ad conſilium ne acceſſeris, antequam voceris*: another to a Spaniſh Codpiſſe: another, that his face was not yet finiſht, with ſuch like innumerable abſurd alluſions: yea, what was he in the Court but hee had a compariſon inſtead of a Capcaſe to put him in. Vpon a time, being challengde at his owne weapon in a priuate Chamber, by a great perſonage, (rayling, I meane) he ſo far outſtript him in villainous words, and

ouer-bandied him in bitter tearms, that the name of ſport could not perſuade him patience, or containe his furie in any degrees of ieaſt, but needs he muſt wreake himſelfe vpon him: neyther would a comon reuenge ſuffiſe him, his diſpleaſure was ſo infinite, (and it may be, common reuenges he tooke before, as far as the whipcord would ſtretch, vpon like prouokements) wherefore he cauſed his men to take him, and bricke him vp in a narrowe chimney, that was *neque major neque minor corpore locato*: where he fed him for fifteene daies with bread and water through a hole, letting him ſleepe ſtanding if he would, for lye or ſit he could not, and then he let him out to ſee if he could learne to rule his tongue any better.

It is a diſparagement to thoſe that haue any true ſpark of Gentilitie, to be noted of the whole world ſo to delight in detracting, that they ſhould keepe a venemous toothde Curre, and feede him with the crums that fall from his table, to do nothing but bite euery one by the ſhins that paſſe by. If they will needs be merrie, let them haue a foole, and not a knaue, to diſport them, and ſeeke ſome other to beſtow their almes on, than ſuch an impudent begger.

As there be thoſe that rayle at all men, ſo there be them that rayle at all Arts, as *Cornelius Agrippa*, *De vanitate ſcientiarum*, and a Treatiſe that I haue

ſeene in diſpraiſe of learning, where hee ſaith, it is the corrupter of the ſimple, the ſchoolemaſter of ſin, the ſtorehouſe of trecherie, the reuiuer of vices, and mother of cowardize: alledging many examples, how there was neuer man egregiouſly euill but hee was a Scholler: that when the vſe of letters was firſt inuented, the Golden World ceaſed, *Facinuſque inuaſit mortales*: how ſtudie doth effeminate a man, dimme his ſight, weaken his braine, and ingender a thouſand diſeaſes. Small learning would ſerue to confute ſo manifeſt a ſcandale, and I imagine all men, like my ſelfe, ſo vnmoueablie / reſolued of the excellencie thereof, that I will not, by the vnderpropping of confutation, ſeeme to giue the idle-witted aduerſary ſo much encouragement, as he ſhould ſurmize his ſuperficiall arguments had ſhaken the foundation of it: againſt which he could neuer haue lifted his pen if her ſelfe had not helpt him to hurt herſelfe.

With the enemies of Poetry, I care not if I haue a bout, and thoſe are they that tearme our beſt Writers but babling Ballat-makers, holding them fantaſtical fooles that haue wit, but cannot tell how to vſe it. I my ſelfe, haue beene ſo cenſured among ſome dul-headed diuines: * who deeme it no more cunning to write an exquiſite

An inuectiue againſt the enemies of Poetrie.

* Absit arrogantia, that this speech

should concerne all diuines, but such dunces as abridge men of their lawfull liberty, & care not how vnprepared they speake to their Auditory.

Poem, than to preach pure *Caluin*, or diſtill the iuice of a Commentary in a quarter Sermon. Prooue it when you will, you ſlowe ſpirited Saturniſts, that haue nothing but the pilfries of your penne, to polliſh an exhortation withall: no eloquence but Tautologies, to tie the eares of your Auditory vnto you: no inuention but heere is to be noted, I ſtole this note out of *Beza* or *Marlorat*: no wit to moue, no paſſion to vrge, but onely an ordinary forme of preaching, blowen vp by vſe of often hearing and ſpeaking; and you ſhall finde there goes more exquiſite paines and puritie of wit, to the writing of one ſuch rare Poem as *Roſamond*, than to a hundred of your dunſticall Sermons.*

* Such Sermons I meane as our sectuaries preach in ditches, and other Conuenticles, when they leape from the Cobblers stall to their pulpits.

Should we (as you) borrow all out of others, and gather nothing of our ſelues, our names would be baffuld on euerie Booke-ſellers ſtall, and not a Chandlers Muſtard-pot but would wipe his mouth with our waſt paper. Newe Herrings, new, we muſt cry, euery time we make our ſelues publique, or elſe we ſhall be chriſtend with a hundred new titles of Idiotiſme. Nor is Poetry an Art whereof there is no vſe in a mans whole life, but to deſcribe diſcontented thoughts and youthfull deſires: for there is no ſtudy, but it dooth illuſtrate & beau-

tifie. How admirably ſhine thoſe Diuines aboue the common mediocritie, that haue taſted the ſweet ſprings of *Pernaſſus*?

Siluer-tongu'd *Smith*, whoſe well tun'd ſtile hath made thy / death the generall teares of the Muſes, queintlie couldſt thou deuiſe heauenly Ditties to *Apolloes* Lute, & teach ſtately verſe to trip it as ſmoothly as if *Ouid* & thou had but one ſoule. Hence along did it proceede, that thou wert ſuch a plauſible pulpit man: before thou entredſt into the wonderfull waies of Theologie, thou refinedſt, preparedſt, and purifideſt thy wings with ſweete Poetrie. If a ſimple mans cenſure may be admitted to ſpeake in ſuch an open Theater of Opinions, I neuer ſaw aboundant reading better mixt with delight, or ſentences which no man can challenge of prophane affectation, ſounding more melodious to the eare, or piercing more deepe to the heart.

The vse of Poetry.

Encomium H. Smithi.

To them that demaund, what fruites the Poets of our time bring forth, or wherein they are able to proue themſelues neceſſarie to the ſtate? Thus I anſwere. Firſt and formoſt, they haue cleanſed our language from barbariſme, and made the vulgar ſort, here in *London*, (which is the fountaine whoſe riuers flowe round about *England*) to aſpire to a richer puritie of ſpeach, than is communicated with the Comminalty of any

The fruits of Poetry.

Nation vnder heauen. The vertuous by their praiſes they encourage to be more vertuous, to vicious men they are as infernall hags, to haunt their ghoſts with eternall infamie after death. The Souldier, in hope to haue his high deedes celebrated by their pens, deſpiſeth a whole Armie of perills, and acteth wonders exceeding all humane coniecture. Thoſe that care neither for God nor the diuell, by their quills are kept in awe. *Multi famam*, (ſaith one) *pauci conſcientiam verentur*.

Plin. lib. 3.

Let God ſee what he will, they would be loath to haue the ſhame of the world. What age wil not prayſe immortal *Sir Phillip Sidney*, whome noble *Saluſtius* (that thrice ſinguler french Poet) hath famouſed: together with *Sir Nicholas Bacon*, lord keeper, & merry *Sir Thomas Moore*, for the chiefe pillers of our engliſh ſpeech. Not ſo much but *Chaucers* hoſt, *Baly* in Southwarke, and his wife of Bath, he keeps ſuch a ſtirre with, in his *Canterbury* tales, ſhalbe talkt of whilſt the Bath is vſed, or there be euer a bad houſe in Southwarke.

Gen / tles, it is not your lay Chronigraphers that write of nothing but of Mayors and Sheriefs, and the deare yeere, and the great Froſt, that can endowe your names with neuer dated glory: for they want the wings

The dispraise of laie chronigraphers.

of choiſe words to fly to heauen, which we haue: they cannot ſweeten a diſcourſe, or wreſt admiration from men reading, as we can: reporting the meaneſt accident. Poetry is the hunny of all flowers, the quinteſſence of all Sciences, the Marrowe of Witte, and the very Phraſe of Angels: how much better is it then to haue an eligant Lawier to plead ones cauſe, than a ſtutting Townsman, that loſeth himſelfe in his tale, and dooth nothing but make legs: ſo much is it better for a Nobleman, or Gentleman, to haue his honours ſtory related, and his deedes emblazond, by a Poet than a Citizen.

Alas poor latinleſſe Authors, they are ſo ſimple, they knowe not what they doe; they no ſooner ſpy a new Ballad, and his name to it that compilde it: but they put him in for one of the learned men of our time. I maruell how the Maſterleſſe men, that ſet vp their bills in Paules for ſeruices, and ſuch as paſte vp their papers on euery poſt, for Arithmetique and writing Schooles, ſcape eternitie amongſt them; I beleeue both they and the Knight Marſhals men, that naile vp *mandates* at the court gat[e], for annoying the Pallace with filth or making water, if they ſet their names to the writing, will ſhortly make vp the number of the learned men of our time, and be as famous as the reſt. For my part, I do

challenge no praiſe of learning to my ſelfe, yet haue I worne a gowne in the Vniuerſitie, and ſo hath *caret tempus non habet moribus*: but this I dare preſume, that, if any *Mecænas* binde mee to him by his bounty, or extend ſome round liberalitie to mee worth the ſpeaking of, I will doe him as much honour as any Poet of my beardleſſe yeeres ſhall in *England*. Not that I am ſo confident what I can doe, but that I attribute ſo much to my thankfull mind aboue others, which I am perſwaded would enable me to worke myracles.

On the contrary ſide, if I bee euill intreated, or ſent away / with a Flea in mine eare, let him looke that I will rayle on him ſoundly: not for an houre or a day, whiles the iniury is freſh in my memory: but in ſome elaborate, polliſhed Poem, which I will leaue to the world when I am dead, to be a liuing Image to all ages, of his beggerly parſimony and ignoble illiberalitie: and let him not (what ſoeuer he be) meaſure the weight of my words by this booke, where I write *Quicquid in buccam venerit*, as faſt as my hand can trot: but I haue tearmes (if I be vext) laid in ſteepe in *Aqua fortis*, and Gunpowder, that ſhall rattle through the Skyes, and make an Earthquake in a peſants eares. Put caſe (ſince I am not yet out of the Theame of

Wrath) that ſome tired Jade belonging to the Preſſe, whome I neuer wronged in my life; hath named me expreſſely in print (as I will not do him), and accuſed me of want of learning, vpbraiding me for reuiuing, in an epiſtle of mine, the reuerend memory of Sir *Thomas Moore*, Sir *John Cheeke*, Doctor *Watſon*, Doctor *Haddon*, Doctor *Carre*, Maiſter *Aſcham*, as if they were no meate but for his Maſterſhips mouth, or none but ſome ſuch, as the ſonne of a ropemaker, were worthy to mention them. To ſhewe how I can rayle, thus would I begin to rayle on him. Thou that hadſt thy hood turnd ouer thy eares, when thou wert a Batchelor, for abuſing of *Ariſtotle*, and ſetting him vp on the Schoole gates, painted with Aſſes eares on his head: is it any diſcredit for me, thou great *baboune*, thou *Pigmie Braggart*, thou Pampheter of nothing but *peans*, to bee cenſured by thee, that haſt ſcorned the Prince of Philoſophers; thou, that in thy Dialogues ſoldſt Hunny for a halpenie, and the choyceſt Writers ex-[t]ant for cues a peece, that cam'ſt to the Logicke Schooles when thou wert a Freſh-man, and writſt phraſes; off with thy gowne and vntruſſe, for I meane to laſh thee mightily. Thou haſt a Brother, haſt thou

I would tell you in what booke it is, but I am afraid it would make his booke sell in his latter daies, which hetherto hath lien dead, and beene a great losse to the Printer.

Looke at the Chandler's shop, or at the Flaxwiues stall, if you see no tow nor Sope wrapt vp in the title page of such a Pamphlet as Incerti authoris Io Pæan.

not, ſtudent in Almanackes? Go to, Ile ſtand to it, he fatherd one of thy baſtards, (a booke I meane) which, being of thy begetting, was ſet forth vnder his name.

Gentlemen, I am ſure you haue hearde of a ridiculous Aſſe, / that many yeares ſince ſold lyes by the great, & wrote an abſurd *aſtrologicall Diſcourſe* of the terrible Coniunction of *Saturne* and *Iupiter*, wherein (as if hee had latelie caſt the Heauens water, or beene at the anatomizing of the Skies intrailes in Surgeons hall) hee prophecieth of ſuch ſtrange wonders to enſue from ſtars diſtemperature, & the vniuerſal adultry of Planets, as none but he, that is Bawd to thoſe celeſtiall bodies, could euer diſcry. What expectation there was of it both in towne & country, the amazement of thoſe times may teſtifie: and the rather, becauſe he pawned his credit vpon it, in theſe expreſſe tearmes: *If theſe things fall not out in euery poynt as I haue wrote, let mee for euer hereafter looſe the credit of my Aſtronomie.* Well, ſo it happend, that he happend not to be a man of his word: his Aſtronomie broke his day with his creditors, and *Saturne* and *Iupiter* prou'd honeſter men than all the World tooke them for: wherevpon, the poore Prognoſticator was ready to runne himſelfe through with his *Iacob's* Staffe, &

Which at home iwis, was worth a dozen of halters, at least, for if I be not deceived, his father was a Ropemaker.

caſt himſelfe headlong from the top of a Globe, (as a mountaine) and breake his necke. The whole Vniuerſitie hyſt at him, *Tarlton* at the Theator made ieſts of him, and *Elderton* conſumed his ale-crammed noſe to nothing, in bear-bayting him with whole bundels of ballets. Would you, in likely reaſon, geſſe it were poſſible for anie ſhame-ſwolne toad to haue the ſpet-proofe face to out liue this diſgrace? It is, deare brethren, *Vivit, imo vivit;* and which is more, he is a Vicar.

Poor Slaue, I pitie thee that thou hadſt no more grace but to come in my way. Why, could not you haue ſate quyet at home, and writ Catechiſmes, but you muſt be comparing me to *Martin?* and exclayme againſt me for reckoning vp the high Schollers of worthie memorie? *Iupiter ingeniis præbet ſua numina vatum*, ſaith *Ouid*; *Seque celebrari quolibet ore ſinit.* Which, if it be ſo, I hope I am *Aliquis*, & thoſe men, *quos honoris cauſa nominavi*, are not greater than Gods. Methinks, I ſee thee ſtand quiuering & quaking, and euen now lift vp thy hands to heauen, as thanking God my choler / is ſomewhat aſſwag'd: but thou art deceiued, for howeuer I let fall my ſtile a little, to talk in reaſon with thee that haſt none, I do not meane to let thee ſcape ſo.

Thou haſt wronged one for my ſake, (whome for the name I muſt loue) T. N., the Maiſter

Butler of Pembrooke Hall, a farre better Scholler than thy felfe, (in my iudgement) and one that fheweth more difcretion and gouernment in fetting vp a fife of Bread, than thou in all thy whole booke. Why man, thinke no fcorne of him, for he hath held thee vp a hundred times, whiles the Deane hath giuen thee correction, and thou haft capd and kneed him (when thou wert hungry) for a chipping. But thats nothing, for hadft thou neuer beene beholding to him, nor holden vp by him, he hath a Beard that is a better Gentlemã than all thy whole body, and a graue countenance, like *Cato*, able to make thee run out of thy wits for feare, if he looke fternly vpon thee. I haue reade ouer thy Sheepifh difcourfe of the Lambe of God and his enemies, and entreated my patience to bee good to thee whilft I read it: but for al that I could doe with myfelfe, (as I am fure I may doe as much as an other man) I could not refraine, but bequeath it to the Priuie, leafe by leafe as I read it, it was fo vgly, dorbellicall, and lamifh. Monftrous, monftrous, and palpable, not to be fpoken of in a Chriftian Congregation: thou haft fkumd ouer the Schoole men, and of the froth of their folly made a difh of diuinitie Brewesse, which the dogges will not eate. If the Printer haue any great dealings with thee, he were beft get a priui-ledge betimes, *Ad imprimendũ ſolum*, forbidding all

other to ſell waſte paper but himſelfe, or elſe he will be in a wofull taking. The Lambe of God make thee a wiſer Bell-weather then thou art, for elſe I doubt thou wilt be driuen to leaue all, and fal to thy fathers occupation, which is, to goe and make a rope to hang thy ſelfe. *Neque enim Lex æquior ulla eſt, quam necis artifices arte perire ſua:* and ſo I leaue thee til a better opportunity, to be tormented world without end, of our Poets and Writers about London, whome thou haſt called piperly Make-plaies / and Make-bates: not doubting but he alſo whom thou tearmeſt the vayn *Pap-hatchet*, wil haue a flurt at thee one day: all ioyntly driuing thee to this iſſue, that thou ſhalt bee conſtrained to goe to the chiefe Beame of thy Benefice, and there beginning a lamẽtable ſpeech with *cur ſcripſi, cur perii,* end with *pravum prava decent, juvat inconceſſa voluptas,* and with a trice truſſe vp thy life in the ſtring of thy Sancebell. So be it, pray Penn, Incke, and paper, on their knees, that they may not be troubled with thee any more.

His owne words.

Redeo ad vos, mei Auditores, haue I not a indifferent pretty veine in ſpurgalling an Aſſe? if you knew how extemporall it were at this inſtant, and with what haſt it is writ, you would ſay ſo. But I would not haue you thinke, that al this that is ſet downe heere, is in good earneſt, for then you

goe by *S. Gyles*, the wrong way to *Weſtminſter*: but onely to ſhew how for a neede I could rayle, if I were throughly fyred. So ho, *Honiger Hammon*: where are you al thys while, I cannot be acquainted with you? Tell me, what doe you thinke of the caſe? am I ſubiect to the ſinne of Wrath I write againſt, or no, in whetting my penne on this block? I know you would faine haue it ſo, but it ſhal not chooſe but be otherwiſe for this once. Come on: let vs turne ouer a new leafe, and heare what Gluttony can ſay for her ſelfe, for Wrath hath ſpet his poyſon, and full platters doe well after extreame purging.

The com-plaint of Gluttonie.

The Romayne Emperours that ſucceeded *Augustus* were exceedingly giuen to this horrible vice, whereof ſome of them would feede on nothing but the tongues of Pheſants and Nightingales: other, would ſpend as much at one banquet, as a Kings reuenues came too in a yeare: whoſe exceſſe I would decypher at large, but that a new Laureat hath ſau'd me the labor: who, for a man that ſtands vpon paines & not wit, hath performd as much, as anie Storie dreſſer may doo, that ſets a new Engliſh nap on an olde Latine Apothegs. It is enough for me to licke diſhes here at home, though I feede not mine eyes at anie of the Ro/mäne feaſts. Much good doo it you, Maſter *Diues*, here in

London: for you are he my pen meanes to dine withall. *Miſerere mei*, what a fat churle it is? Why, he hath a belly as big as the round Church in *Cambridge*, a face as huge as the whole bodie of a baſe viall, and legs that, if they were hollow, a man might keepe a mill in either of them. *Experto crede Roberto*, there is no maſt like a Marchaunts table. *Bonâ ſide*, it is a great miſture, that we haue not men ſwine as well as beaſts, for then we ſhould haue porke that hath no more bones than a pudding, and a ſide of bacon that you might lay vnder your head in ſtead of a bolſter.

It is not for nothing that other Countries, whome wee vpbraid with Drunkenneſſe, call vs burſten-bellied Gluttons: for we make our greedie paunches powdring tubs of beefe, and eate more meat at one meale, than the Spaniard or Italian in a month. Good thriftie men, they drawe out a dinner with ſallets, like a *Swart-rutters* ſute, and make *Madona* Nature their beſt Caterer. We muſt haue our Tables furniſht like Poultrers ſtalls, or as though we were to victuall *Noahs* Arke againe, (wherein there was al ſorts of liuing creatures that euer were) or els the good-wife wil not open her mouth to bid one welcome. A ſtranger that ſhould come to one of our *Magnificoes* houſes, when dinner were ſet on

Nature in England is but plaine Dame, but in Spa[y]ne and Italy (because they haue more vse of her than we) she is dubbed a Lady.

the boord, and he not yet ſet, would think the goodman of the houſe were a Haberdaſher of Wilde-fowle, or a Merchant venturer of daintie meate, that ſells commodities of good cheere by the great, and hath Factors in *Arabia*, *Turkey*, *Egipt*, and *Barbarie*, to prouide him of ſtraunge Birdes, *China* muſtard, and odde paterns to make Cuſtards by.

Lord, what a coyle haue we, with this Courſe and that Courſe, remoouing this diſh higher, ſetting another lower, and taking away the third. A Generall might in leſſe ſpace remoue his Camp, than they ſtand diſpoſing of their Gluttonie. And whereto tends all this gurmandiſe, but to giue ſleepe groſſe humors to feede on, to corrupt the braine, and make it vnapt and vnweldie for anie thing?

The / Romane Cenſors, if they lighted vppon a fat corpulent man, they ſtraight tooke away his horſe, and conſtrained him to goe a foote: poſitiuely concluding his carkaſſe was ſo puft vp with gluttony or idleneſſe. If wee had ſuch horſe-takers amongſt vs, and that ſurfit-ſwolne Churles, who now ride on their foot-cloathes, might bee conſtrained to carrie their fleſh budgets from place to place on foote, the price of veluet and cloath would fall with their bellies, and the gentle craft (*alias* the red herrings kinſmen) get more, &

drinke leſſe. *Plenus venter nil agit libenter, & plures gula occidit quam gladius.* It is as deſperate a peece of ſeruice to ſleep vpon a full ſtomacke, as it is to ſerue in face of the bullet: a man is but his breath, and that may as wel be ſtopt by putting too much in his mouth at once, as rũning on the mouth of the Cannon. That is verified of vs, which *Horace* writes of an outragious eater in his time, *Quicquid quæſierat ventri donabat avaro,* Whatſoeuer he could rap or rend, he confiſcated to his couetous gut. Nay, we are ſuch fleſh-eating Saracens, that chaſt fiſh may not content vs, but we delight in the murder of innocent mutton, in the vnpluming of pullerie, and quartering of calues and oxen. It is horrible and deteſtable, no godly Fiſhmonger that can digeſt it. Report (which our moderners clepe flundring Fame) puts mee in memorye of a notable ieſt I heard long agoe of Doctor *Watſon*, verie conducible to the reproofe of theſe fleſhly-minded *Belials.* He being at ſupper, on a faſting or fiſh night at leaſt, with a great number of his freinds and acquaintance, there chaunced to be in the company an outlandiſh doctor, who, when all other fell to ſuch victuals (agreeing to the time) as were before them, he ouerſlipt them; and there being one ioynt of fleſh on the table for ſuch as

A rare wittie ieſt of Doctor Watsons.

Or rather belly-alls, because all their minde is on their belly.

had meate ſtomackes, fell freſhly to it. After that hunger (halfe conquered) had reſtored him to the vſe of his ſpeach, for his excuſe he ſaid to his friend that brought him thether, *Profectò, Domine, ego ſum maliſſimus piſcator*, meaning by *piſcator*, a Fiſhman: (which is a libertie, as alſo *maliſſimus*, that outlandiſh men in their familiar talke doo challenge, at leaſt vſe, aboue / vs). *At tu es boniſſimus carnifex*, quoth Doctor *Watſon*, retorting very merrily his owne licentious figures vpon him. So of vs it may be ſaid, we are *Maliſſimi piſcatores*, but *boniſſimi carnifices*. I would Engliſh the ieſt, for the edification of the temporaltie, but that it is not ſo good in Engliſh as in Latine: and though it were as good, it would not conuert clubs and clowted ſhoone from the fleſh-pots of *Egipt*, to the Prouant of the Lowe countreyes: they had rather (with the Seruing-man) put vp a ſupplication to the Parliament houſe, that they might haue a yard of pudding for a penie, than deſire (with the Baker) there might bee three ounces of bread ſold for a halfe penie.

The moderation of Fryer Alphonso, King Phillips Confessor.

Alphonſus, King *Philips* Confeſſor, that came ouer with him to *England*, was ſuch a moderate man in his dyet, that he would feede but once a day, and at that tyme hee would feed ſo ſlenderly and ſparingly, as ſcarſe ſerued to keep life and ſoule together.

One night, importunately inuited to a ſolemnne banquet, for faſhion ſake he ſate downe among the reſt, but by no entreatie could be drawen to eat any thing: at length, frute being ſet on the boord, he reacht an apple out of the diſh, and put it in his pocket, which one marking, that ſate right ouer againſt him, aſkt him, *Domine, cur es ſolicitus in craſtinum? Sir, why are you carefull for the morrow?* Whereto he anſwered moſt ſoberly, *Imo hoc facio, mi amice, ut ne ſim ſolicitus in craſtinum. No, I doo it, my frind, that I may not be carefull for the morrow:* as though his appetite were a whole day contented with ſo little as an apple, and that it were enough to pay the morrowes tribute to Nature.

The strange alteration of the Countie Molines, the Prince of Parmas Com panion.

Rare, and worthie to be regiſtred to all poſterities, is the Countie Molines (ſometime the Prince of *Parmaes* companion) altred courſe of life, who being a man that liued in as great pompe and delicacie as was poſſible for a man to doo, and one that wanted nothing but a kingdome that his heart could deſire. Vpon a day entering into a deepe melancholy by himſelfe, hee fell into a discourſiue conſideration what this world was, how vaine and tranſitorie the pleaſures / thereof, and how many times he had offended God by ſurfetting, gluttony, drunkennes, pride, whoredome,

& ſuch like, and how hard it was for him, that liu'd in that proſperitie that he did, not to bee entangled with thoſe pleaſures: whereupon he preſently reſolu'd, twixt God and his owne conſcience, to forſake it and al his allurements, and betake him to his ſeuereſt forme of life vſed in their ſtate. And with that cald all his Souldiers and acquaintance together, and, making knowen his intent vnto them, he diſtributed his liuing and poſſeſſions (which were infinite) amongſt the pooreſt of them: and hauing not left himſelfe the worth of one farthing vnder heauen, betooke him to the moſt beggerlie new erected Order of the Fryer Capuchines. Their Inſtitution is, that they ſhall poſſeſſe nothing whatſoeuer of their owne, more than the cloathes on their backes, continually to go bare foote, weare haire ſhirts, and lie vpon the hard bords, winter & ſummer time: they muſt haue no meat, nor aſke any but what is giuen thē voluntarily, nor muſt they lay vp from any meale to meale, but giue it to ẏ poore, or els it is a great penaltie. In this ſeuere humilitie liues this deuout Countie, and hath done this foure yeare, ſubmitting himſelfe to al the baſe drudgery of the houſe, as fetching water, making cleane the reſt of their chambers, inſomuch as he is the *Iunior* of the Order. O what a notable rebuke were his honourable Lowlines to ſucceeding pride, if this

proſtrate ſpirit of his were not the ſeruaunt of Superſtition: or hee miſſpent not his good workes on a wrong Faith.

Let but our Engliſh belly-gods puniſh their purſie bodies with this ſtrict penaunce, and profeſſe the Capuchiniſme but one month, and Ile be their pledge, they ſhall not grow ſo like dry-fats as they doo. O it will make them iolly long-winded, to trot vp and downe the Dorter ſtaires, and the water-tankard will keepe vnder the inſurrection of their ſhoulders, the haire ſhirt will chaſe whordome out of their boanes, and the hard lodging on the boards, take their fleſh downe a button hole lower.

But / if they might be induced to diſtribute all their goods amongſt the poore, it were to be hoped Saint *Peter* would let them dwell in the ſuburbes of heauen, whereas, otherwiſe, they muſt keepe aloofe at *Pancredge*, and not come neere the liberties by fiue leagues and aboue. It is your dooing (*Diotrephes* Diuell) that theſe ſtal-fed cormorants to damnation, muſt bung vp all the welth of the Land in their ſnap-haunce bags, and poore Schollers and Souldiers wander in backe lanes, and the out-ſhiftes of the Citie, with neuer a rag to their backes: but our truſt is, that by ſome intemperance or other, you will tourne vp their heeles one of theſe yeares together, and prouide them of

ſuch vnthrifts to their heires, as ſhall ſpend in one weeke amongſt good fellowes what they got by extortion and opreſſion from Gentlemen all their life-time.

From Gluttonie in meates, let me diſcend to ſuperfluitie in drink: a ſinne, that euer ſince we haue mixt our ſelues with the Low-countries, is counted honourable: but before we knew their lingring warres, was held in ŷ higheſt degree of hatred that might be. Then, if wee had ſeene a man goe wallowing in the ſtreetes, or line ſleeping vnder the boord, we would haue ſpet at him as a toade, and cald him foule drunken ſwine, and warnd all our friends out of his company: now, he is no body that cannot drinke *ſuper nagulum*, carouſe the Hunters hoop, quaffe *vpſey freze croſſe*, with leapes gloues, mumpes, fro[l]ickes, and a thouſand ſuch dominiering inuentions. He is reputed a peſaunt and a boore that will not take his licour profoundly. And you ſhall heare a Caualier of the firſt feather, a princockes that was but a Page the other day in the Court, and now is all to be frenchified in his Souldiers ſute, ſtand vpon termes with God's wounds, you diſhonour me ſir, you do me the disgrace if you do not pledge me as much as I drunke

The cŏplaint of drunkennes.

Drinking super nagulum, a deuise of drinking new come out of Fraunce; which is, after a man hath turnd vp the bottom of the cup, to drop it on hys naile, and make a pearle with that is left; which, if it slide, and he cannot mak stand on, by reason thers too much, he must drinke againe for his penance.

to you: and, in the midſt of his cups, ſtand vaunting his manhood, beginning euery ſentence, with when I firſt bore Armes, when he neuer bare any thing but his Lords rapier after him in his/life. If he haue beene ouer, and viſited a towne of Garriſon, as a trauailer or paſſenger, he hath as great experience as the greateſt Commander and chiefe Leader in *England*. A mightie deformer of mens manners and features, is this vnneceſſary vice of all other. Let him bee indued with neuer ſo many vertues, and haue as much goodly proportion and fauour, as nature can beſtow vpon a man: yet if hee be thirſtie after his owne deſtruction, and hath no ioy nor comfort, but when he is drowning his ſoule in a gallon pot, that one beaſtly imperfection wil vtterly obſcure all that is commendable in him: and all his good qualities ſinke like lead downe to the bottome of his carrowſing cups, where they will lie, like ıees and dregges, dead and vnregarded of any man.

Clim of the clough, thou that vſeſt to drinke nothing but ſcalding lead and ſulpher in hell, thou art not ſo greedie of thy night geare. O, but thou haſt a foule ſwallow, if it come once to carouſing of humane bloud: but thats but ſeldome once in ſeauen yeare, when theres a great execution, otherwiſe thou art tide at rack and manger, and drinkſt nothing but the *Aqua vitæ* of vengeance all thy

life time. The Prouerbe giues it foorth, thou art a knaue, and therefore I haue more hope thou art ſome manner of a good fellowe: let mee intreate thee (ſince thou haſt other iniquities inough to circumuent vs withall) to wipe this ſinne out of the catologue of thy ſubtiltie: helpe to blaſt the Vines, that they may beare no more grapes, and ſowre the wines in the cellars of Marchants ſtore-houſes, that our Countreymen may not piſſe out all their wit and thrift againſt the walles. King *Edgar*, becauſe his ſubiects ſhould not offend in ſwilling, & bibbing, as they did, cauſed certaine iron cups to be chained to euery fountaine and wells ſide, and at euery Vintners doore, with iron pins in them, to ſtint euery man how much he ſhould drinke: and he that went beyond one of thoſe pins forfeited a penny for euery draught. And, if Stories were well ſearcht, I beleeue hoopes in quart pots were inuented to that ende, that euery man ſhould take his hoope, and no more. / I haue heard it iuſtified for a trueth by great Perſonages, that the olde Marqueſſe of *Piſana* (who yet liues) drinkes not once in ſeauen yeare: and I haue read of one *Andron* of *Argos*, that was ſo ſildome thirſtie, that he trauailed ouer the hot burning ſands of *Lybia*, & neuer dranke. Then, why ſhould our colde Clime bring

King Edgars ordinance against drinking.

The Wonderfull abstinence of the Marques of Pisana, yet liuing.

foorth ſuch fierie throates? Are we more thirſtie than *Spaine* and *Italy*, where the Sunnes force is doubled? The *Germaines* and lowe Dutch, me thinkes, ſhould bee continually kept moyſt with the foggie aire and ſtinking miſtes that ariſe out of their fennie ſoyle: but as their Countrey is ouerflowen with water, ſo are their heads alwaies ouerflowen with wine, and in their bellies they haue ſtanding quag-mires & bogs of Engliſh beere.

One of their breede it was that writ the Booke, *De Arte bibendi*, a worſhipfull treatiſe, fitte for none but *Silenus* and his Aſſe to ſet forth: beſides that volume, we haue generall rules and iniunctions, as good as printed precepts, or Statutes ſet downe by Acte of Parliament, that goe from drunkard to drunkard; as ſtill to keepe your firſt man, not to leaue any flockes in the bottome of the cup, to knock the glaſſe on your thumbe when you haue done, to haue ſome ſhooing horne to pull on your wine, as a raſher of the coles, or a redde herring, to ſtirre it about with a candles ende to make it taſte better, and not to holde your peace whiles the pot is ſtirring.

The priuate lawes amongst drunkards.

Nor haue we one or two kinde of drunkards onely, but eight kindes. The firſt is Ape drunke, and he leapes, and ſings, and hollowes, and daunceth for the heauens: the ſecond is Lion drunke, and he flings the pots

The eight kindes of drunkennesse.

about the houſe, calls his Hoſteſſe whore, breakes the glaſſe windowes with his dagger, and is apt to quarrell with any man that ſpeaks to him: the third is Swine drunke; heauy, lumpiſh, and ſleepie, and cries for a little more drinke, and a fewe more cloathes: the fourth is Sheepe drunke, wiſe in his own cõceipt, when he cannot bring foorth a right word: the fifth is Mawdlen drunke; when a fellow wil weepe for kindnes in the / midſt of his Ale, and kiſſe you, ſaying, By God, Captaine, I loue thee: goe thy waies, thou doſt not thinke ſo often of me as I do of thee, I would (if it pleaſed God) I could not loue thee ſo well as I doo: and then he puts his finger in his eie, and cries: the ſixt is Martin drunke, when a man is drunke, and drinkes himſelfe ſober ere he ſtirre: the ſeuenth is Goate drunke, when, in his drunkennes, he hath no minde but on Lecherie: the eighth is Fox drunke, when he is craftie drunke, as manie of the Dutchmen bee, [that] will neuer bargaine but when they are drunke. All theſe *ſpecies*, and more, haue I ſeen practiſed in one Companie at one ſitting, when I haue been permitted to remaine ſober amongſt them, onely to note their ſeuerall humors. Hee that plies any one of them harde, it will make him to write admirable verſes, and to haue a deepe caſting heade, though hee were neuer ſo very a Dunce before.

Gentlemen, all you that will not haue your braines twiſe ſodden, or your fleſh rotten with the Dropſie, that loue not to goe in greaſie dublets, ſtockings out at the heeles, and weare ale-houſe daggers at your backes, forſweare this ſlauering brauery, that will make you haue ſtinking breathes, and your bodies ſmell like Brewers' aprons: rather keepe a ſnuffe in the bottome of the glaſſe to light you to bed withall, than leaue neuer an eye in your head to lead you ouer the threſhold. It will bring you, in your olde age, to be companions with none but Porters and Car-men, to talke out of a Cage, rayling as dronken men are wont, a hundred boyes wondering about them; and to dye ſodainly, as *Fol Long*, the Fencer, did, drinking *Aqua vitæ*. From which (as all the reſt) good Lord deliuer *Pierce Peni-leſſe.*

The discommodities of drunkennes.

The nurſe of this enormitie (as of all euills) is Idlenes, or ſloth, which, hauing no painful Proui[de]nce to ſet him ſelfe a worke, runnes headlong, with the raines in his own hand, into all laſciuiouſneſſe and ſenſualitie that may bee. Men, / when they are idle, and know not what to do, ſaith one, Let vs goe to the Stilliard, and drinke Rheniſh wine. Nay, if a man knew where a good whorhouſe wer, ſaith another, it were ſomwhat like. Nay, ſaith the third, let vs go to a dicing houſe or

The cōplaint of Sloth.

a bowling alley, and there we ſhall haue ſome ſport for our money. To one of theſe three (at hand, quoth pick-purſe) your euil Angelſhip, maiſter mani-headed beaſt, conducts them, *Vbi quid agitur* —betwixt you and their ſoules be it, for I am no Drawer, Box-keeper, or Pander, to bee priuie to their ſports. If I were to paint Sloth, (as I am not ſene in the ſweetenings) by Saint *Iohn* the Euangeliſt, I ſweare I would draw it like a Stationer that I knowe, with his thumb vnder his girdle, who if a man come to his ſtall and aſke him for a booke, neuer ſtirs his head, or looks vpon him, but ſtands ſtone ſtill, and ſpeaks not a word: only with his little finger points backwards to his boy, who muſt be his interpreter, and ſo al the day, gaping like a dumbe image, he ſits without motion, except at ſuch times as he goes to dinner or ſupper: for then he is as quicke as other three, eating ſixe times euery day. If I would raunge abroad, and looke in at ſluggards key-holes, I ſhould finde a number lying a bed to ſaue charges of ordinaries, & in winter, when they want firing, loſing halfe a weeks Commons together, to keepe them warme in the linnen. And hold you content, this Summer an vnder-meale of an afternoone long doth not amiſſe to exerciſe the eies withall. Fat men and Farmers ſonnes, that ſweate much with eating

Videlicet, before he come out of his bed, then a set breakfast, thē dinner, then after noones nunchings, a supper, and a reresupper.

harde cheefe, and drinking olde wine, muft haue fome more eafe than yong boyes, that take their pleafure all day running vp and downe.

Setting iefting afide, I hold it a great difputable queftion, which is a more euil man, of him that is an idle glutton at home, or a retchleffe vnthrift abroad? The glotton at home doth nothing but engender difeafes, pamper his flefh vnto luft, and is good for none but his owne gut: the vnthrift abroad exercifeth his bodie at dauncing fchoole, fence fchoole, tennis, and all fuch recreations: the vintners, the victuallers, / the dicing-houfes, and who not, get by him. Suppofe he lofe a little now and then at play, it teacheth him wit: and how fhould a man know to efchue vices, if his owne experience did not acquaint him with their inconueniences? *Omne ignotum pro magnifico eft:* that villainie we haue made no affayes in, we admyre. Befides, my vagrant Reueller haunts Playes, and fharpens his wits with frequenting the company of Poets: he emboldens his blufhing face by courting faire women on the fodaine, and lookes into all Eftates by conuerfing with them in publike places. Nowe tell me whether of thefe two, the heauy headed gluttonous houfe doue, or this liuely, wanton, young Gallant, is like to prooue the wifer man, and better member in the Common wealth? If

Which is better of the idle glutton, or vagrant vnthrift?

my youth might not be thought partiall, the fine qualified Gentleman, although vnſtaid, ſhould carie it clean away from the lazie clowniſh droane.

The effects of sloth.

Sloth in Nobilitie, Courtiers, Schollers, or any men, is the chiefeſt cauſe that brings them in contempt. For, as induſtrie and vnfatigable toyle raiſeth meane perſons from obſcure houſes to high thrones of authoritie: ſo Sloath, and ſluggiſh ſecurity, cauſeth proud Lordes to tumble from the towers of their ſtarry diſcents, and bee trod vnder foote of euery inferior Beſonian. Is it the lofty treading of a Galliard, or fine grace in telling of a loue tale amongſt Ladies, can make a man reuerenſt of the multitude? no, they care not for the falſe gliſtering of gay garments, or inſinuating curteſie of a carpet Peere; but they delight to ſee him ſhine in Armour, and oppoſe himſelfe to honourable daunger, to participate a voluntarie penie with his ſouldiers, and relieue part of their wante out of his owne purſe. That is the courſe he that will be popular muſt take, which, if he neglect, and ſit dallying at home, nor will be awakte by any indignities out of his loue-dreame, but ſuffer euery vpſtart groome to defie him, ſet him at naught, and ſhake him by the beard vnreuengde, let him ſtraight take orders, and bee a Church-man, and then his patience may paſſe for a vertue: but otherwiſe, to be ſuſpected of cowardiſe,

and not car'd for of / any. The onely enemie to Sloth, is contention and emulation; as to propofe one man to my felfe, that is the onely myrrour of our Age, and ftriue to outgoe him in vertue. But this ftrife muft be fo tempred, that we fal not from the eagerneffe of prayfe, to the enuying of their perfons: for, then, we leaue running to the goale of glory, to fpurne at a ftone that lies in our way; and fo did *Atlante*, in the middeft of her courfe ftoup to take vp the golden apple ẏ her enemie fcattered in her way, and was out-runne by *Hippomenes*. The contrary to this contention, & emulation, is fecuritie, peace, quiet, tranquillitie: when we haue no aduerfary to prie into our actions, no malicious eye, whofe purfuing our priuate behauiour, might make vs more vigilant ouer our imperfections, than otherwife we would be.

The means to auoyde Slouth.

That State or Kingdome that is in league with all the World, and hath no forraine fword to vexe it, is not half fo ftrong or confirmed to endure, as that which liues euery houre in feare of inuafion. There is a certaine wafte of the people for whom there is no vfe, but warre: and thefe men muft haue fome employment ftill to cut them off. *Nam fi foras hoftem non habent, domi invenient.* If they haue no feruice abroad, they will make mutinies at home. Or if the affayres of the State be fuch, as

cannot exhale all theſe corrupt excrements, it is very expedient they haue ſome light toyes to buſie their heades withall, to caſt before them as bones to gnaw vppon, which may keepe them from hauing leaſure to intermeddle with higher matters.

The defẽce of Playes.

To this effect, the pollicie of Playes is verie neceſſary, howſoeuer ſome ſhallow-braind cenſurers (not the deepeſt ſerchers into the ſecrets of gouernment) mightily oppugne them. For whereas the after-noone being the idleſt time of the day; wherein men that are their owne maſters, (as Gentlemen of the Court, the Innes of the Court, and the number of Captaines and Souldiers about *London*) doo wholly beſtow themſelues vpon pleaſure, and that pleaſure they deuide (how vertuouſly it ſkilles not) either into gameing, following of harlots, drinking, or ſeeing a Play: is it not / then better (ſince of foure extreames all the world cannot keepe them but they will chooſe one) that they ſhould betake them to the leaſt, which is Playes? Nay, what if I prooue Playes to be no extreame; but a rare exerciſe of vertue? Firſt, for the ſubiect of them (for the moſt part) it is borrowed out of our Engliſh Chronicles, wherein our forefathers valiant actes (that haue lien long buried in ruſtie braſs and worme-eaten bookes) are reuiued, and they themſelues rayſed from the Graue of Obliuion, and brought to pleade their

aged Honours in open preſence: than which, what can be a ſharper reproofe to theſe degenerate effeminate dayes of ours?

How would it haue ioyed braue *Talbot* (the terror of the French) to thinke that after he had lyen two hundred yeare in his Toomb, he ſhould triumph againe on the Stage, and haue his bones new embalmed with the teares of ten thouſand ſpectators at leaſt, (at ſeuerall times) who, in the Tragedian that repreſents his perſon, imagine they behold him freſh bleeding.

I will defend it againſt anie Collian, or clubfiſted Vſurer of them all, there is no immortalitie can be giuen a man on earth like vnto Playes. What talke I to them of immortalitie, that are the onely vnderminers of Honour, & doe enuie any man that is not ſprung vp by baſe Brokerie like themſelues. They care not if all the auncient Houſes were rooted out, ſo that, like the Burgomaſters of the Low countries, they might ſhare the gouern ment amongſt them as States, & be quarter-maſters of our Monarchie. Al Arts to them are vanitie: and, if you tell them what a glorious thing it is to haue *Henry* the fifth repreſented on the Stage, leading the French King priſoner, and forcing both him and the Dolphin to ſweare fealty. I, but (will they ſay) what doo we get by it? reſpecting neither the right of Fame that is due to true

Nobilitie deceafed, nor what hopes of eternitie are to be propofed to aduentrous mindes, to encourage them forward, but onely their execrable lucre, & filthy vnquenchable auarice.

They / know when they are dead they fhal not be brought vpon the Stage for any goodnes, but in a merriment of the Vfurer and the Diuel, or buying Armes of the Herald, who giues them the Lyon, without tongue tayle or tallents, becaufe his mafter whom he muft ferue is a Townefman, and a man of peace, and muft not keepe any quarrelling beafts to annoy his honeft neighbours.

The vse of Playes.

In Playes, all coofonages, all cunning drifts ouerguylded with outward holineffe, all ftratagems of warre, all the canker-wormes that breede on the ruft of peace, are moft liuely anatomiz'd: they fhew the ill fucceffe of treafon, the fall of hafty climbers, the wretched ende of vfurpers, the miferie of ciuil diffention, and how iuft God is euermore in punifhing of murther. And to prooue euery one of thefe allegations, could I propound the circumftances of this play and that play, if I meant to handle this Theame other wife than *obiter*. What fhould I fay more? they are fower pills of reprehenfion, wrapt vp in fweete words. Wheras fome Petitioners to the Counfaile againft them obiect, they corrupt the youth of

The confutation of Citizens obiections against Players.

the Citie, and withdrawe Prentiſes from their worke; they heartely wiſh they might be troubled with none of their youth nor their prentiſes; for ſome of them (I meane the ruder handi-craftes ſeruaunts) neuer come abroad, but they are in danger of vndooing: and as for corrupting them when they come, thats falſe; for no Play they haue, encourageth any man to tumults or rebellion, but layes before ſuch the halter and the gallowes; or prayſeth or approoueth pride, luſt, whoredome, prodigalitie, or drunkennes, but beates them downe vtterly. As for the hindrance of Trades and Traders of the Citie by them, that is an Article foyſted in by the vintners, ale-wiues, and victuallers, who ſurmiſe, if there were no Playes, they ſhould haue all the companie that reſort to them, lye bowzing and beere-bathing in their houſes euery after-noone. Nor ſo, nor ſo, good brother bottle-ale, for there are other places beſide where money can beſtow it ſelfe: the ſigne of the ſmocke will wype your mouth clean: and yet I haue heard ye haue made/her a tenant to your tap-houſes. But what ſhall he doo that hath ſpent himſelfe? where ſhall he haunt? Faith, when dice, luſt, and drunkennes, and all haue dealt vpon him, if there bee neuer a Play for him to goe to for his penie, he ſits melancholie in his chamber, deuiſing vpon felonie or treaſon,

and howe hee may beſt exalt himſelfe by mischiefe.

In *Auguſtus* time (who was the Patron of all witty ſports) there happened a great Fray in *Rome* about a Plaier, inſomuch as all the Citie was in an vprore: whereupon the Emperour (after the broyle was ſomewhat ouer-blown) cald the Player before him, and aſkt what was the reaſon that a man of his qualitie durſt preſume to make ſuch a brawle about nothing. He ſmilingly replyde, *It is good for thee O Cæſar, that the peoples heades are troubled with brawles and quarrels about vs and our light matters: for otherwiſe they would looke into thee and thy matters.* Read *Lipſius* or any prophane or Chriſtian Politician, and you ſhal finde him of this opinion. Our Players are not as the players beyond ſea, a ſort of ſquirting baudie Comedians, that haue whores and common Curtizans to play womens parts, and forbeare no immodeſt ſpeech or vnchaſt action that may procure laughter; but our Sceane is more ſtately furniſht than euer it was in the time of *Roſcius*, our repreſentations honorable, and full of gallant reſolution, not conſiſting, like theirs, of a Pantaloun, a Whore, and a Zanie, but of Emperours, Kings, and Princes: whoſe true Tragedies (*Sophocleo cothurno*) they doo vaunt.

A Players wittie answere to Augustus.

A comparison twixt our Players and the Players beyond the Sea.

Not *Roſcius* nor *Æſope*, thoſe Tragedians admyred before Chriſt was borne, could euer performe more in action than famous *Ned Allen*. I muſt accuſe our Poets of ſloth and partialitie, that they will not boaſt in large impreſſions what worthy men (aboue all Nations) *England* affoords. Other Countries cannot haue a Fidler breake a ſtring but they will put it in print, and the olde *Romanes* in the writings they publiſhed, thought ſcorne to vſe any but domeſtical examples of their owne home-bred Actors, Schollers, / and Champions, and them they would extoll to the third and fourth Generation: Coblers, Tinkers, Fencers, none eſcapt them, but they mingled them all on one Gallimafrey of glory.

The due cõmendation of Ned Allen.

Heere I haue vſed a like Methode, not of tying my ſelfe to mine owne Countrey, but by inſiſting in the experience of our time: and, if I euer write any thing in Latine, (as I hope one day I ſhall) not a man of any deſert here amongſt vs, but I will haue vp. *Tarlton*, *Ned Allen*, *Knell*, *Bentlie*, ſhall be made knowen to *France*, *Spaine*, and *Italie*: and not a part that they ſurmounted in, more than other, but I will there note and ſet downe, with the manner of their habites and attyre.

The child of Sloth is Lecherie, which I haue plac't laſt in my order of handling: a ſinne that

is able to make a man wicked that ſhould deſcribe it; for it hath more ſtarting-holes than a ſiue hath holes, more Clyents than *Weſt-minſter-hall*, more diſeaſes than *Newgate*. Call a Leete at *Byſhopſgate*, & examine how euery ſecond houſe in *S*[*h*]*orditch* is mayntayned: make a priuie ſearch in *Southwarke*, and tell mee how many Shee-Inmates you finde: nay, goe where you will in the Suburbes, and bring me two Virgins that haue vowd Chaſtity, and Ile builde a Nunnery.

The seuēnth and last complaint, of Lechery.

Weſtminſter, *Weſtminſter*, much maydenhead haſt thou to anſwere for at the day of Judgement. Thou hadſt a Sanctuary in thee once, but haſt few Saints left in thee now. Surgeons and Appothecaries, you know what I ſpeake is true; for you liue (like Sumners) vpon the ſinnes of the people; tell me is there any place ſo lewde as this Ladie *London*? Not a Wench ſooner creepes out of the ſhell, but ſhe is of the Religion. Some wiues will ſowe Mandrake in their gardens, and croſſe-neighbourhoode with them is counted good-fellowſhip.

The Court I dare not touch, but ſurely there (as in the Heauens) bee many falling ſtarres, and but one true *Diana*. *Conſuetudo peccandi tollit ſenſum peccati*. Cuſtome is a Lawe, and / Luſt holdes it for a Lawe, to liue without Lawe. *Lais*, that had

ſo many Poets to her Louers, could not allwayes preſerue her beauty with their prayſes. Marble will weare away with much raine: Gold wil ruſt with moyſt keeping: & the ritcheſt garments are ſubiect to Times Moath-frets; *Clitemneſtra*, that ſlew her huſband to enioye the Adulturer *Ægiſtus*, and bathde herſelfe in Milke euery day to make her young agayne, had a time when ſhee was aſhamed to viewe herſelfe in a looking glaſſe, and her body withered, her minde being greene. The people poynted at her for a murtherer, young children howted at her as a ſtrumpet: ſhame, miſery, ſickneſſe, beggery, is the beſt end of vncleanneſſe.

Lais, *Cleopatra*, *Helen*, if our Clyme had any ſuch, noble Lord warden of the Wenches & Anglers, I commend them with the reſt of our vncleane ſiſters in *Shorditch*, the *Spittle*, *Southwarke*, *Weſtminſter*, and *Turnbull ſtreete*, to the protection of your Porterſhip: hoping you will ſpeedily carrie them to hell, there to keepe open houſe for all young diuels that come, and not let our ayre bee contaminated with theyr ſixpenie damnation any longer.

Your Diuelſhips
bounden execrator,
Pierce Penileſſe.

A / Supplication calst thou this? (quoth the Knight of the post) it is the maddest Supplication that euer I sawe; me thinkes thou hast handled all the seauen deadly sinnes in it, and spared none that exceedes his limites in any of them. It is wel done to practise thy witte, but (I beleeue) our Lord will cun thee little thanke for it.

The worse for me (quoth I), if my destinie be such, to lose my labour euery where, but I meane to take my chance, be it good or bad. Wel, hast thou any more that thou wouldest haue me to doo? (quoth hee) Onely one sute, (quoth I) which is this, that sith opportunitie so conueniently serues, you would acquaint me with the state of your infernal regiment: and what that hel is, where your Lord holdes his throne; whether a world like this, which spirites like outlawes doo inhabit, who, being banisht from heauen, as they are from their Countrie, enuie that any shall bee more happy than they: and therefore seeke all meanes possible, that Wit or Arte may inuent, to make other men as wretched as themselues: or, whether it be a place of horror, stench, and darknesse, where men see meat, but can get none, or are euer thirstie, and ready to swelt for drinke, yet haue not the power to tast the coole streames that runne hard at their feete: where (*permutata vicissitudine*) one Ghost

torments an other by turnes, and hee that al his life time was a great fornicator, hath all the diseases of lust continually hanging vpon him, and is constrayned (the more to augment his misery) to haue congresse euery howre with hagges and olde witches: and he that was a great drunkard heere on earth, hath his penance assignde him, to carouse himselfe drunke with dishwash and Vineger, and surfet foure times a day with sower Ale and small Beere: as so of the rest, as the vsurer to swallow moulten golde, the glutton to eate nothing but toades, and the Murtherer too be stil stabd with daggers, but neuer die: or whether (as some phantastical refyners of philosophie will needes perswade vs) hell is nothing but error, and that none but fooles and Idiotes and Mechani / call men, that haue no learning, shall be damnd: of these doubts if you will resolue me, I shall thinke my self to haue profited greatly by your companie.

He hearing me so inquisitiue in matters aboue humane capacitie, entertained my greedie humor with this answere. Poets and Philosophers, that take a pride in inuenting new opinions, haue sought to renoume their wits by hunting after strange conceits of heauen and hell; all generally agreeing, that such places there are, but how inhabited, by whom gouerned, or what betides them that are transported to the one or other, not two of

them iumpe in one tale. We, that to our terror and griefe doe knowe their dotage by our sufferings, reioyce to thinke how these sillie flyes play with the fire that must burne them.

But leauing them to the Laborynth of their fond curiositie, shall I tell thee in a word what Hell is? It is a place where ẏ soules of vntemperate men, & ill liuers of al sorts, are detayned and imprisoned till the generall Resurrection, kept and possessed chiefly by spirites, who lye like Souldiours in Garrison, readie to be sent about any seruice into the world, whensoeuer *Lucifer*, their Lieftenaunt Generall, pleaseth. For the scituation of it, in respect of heauen, I can no better compare it than to *Callis* and *Douer*: for, as a man standing vpon *Callis* Sands may see men walking on *Douer* Clyffes, so easily may you discerne Heauen from the farthest part of hell, and behold the melodie and motions of the Angels and Spirits there resident, in such perfect manner, as if you were amongst them; which, how it worketh in the mindes and soules of them that haue no power to apprehend such felicitie, it is not for me to intimate, because it is preiudiciall to our Monarchie.

I would bee sorrie (quoth I) to importune you in any matter of secrecie: yet this I desire, if it might bee done without offence, that you would

ſatisfie me in full ſort, and according to truth, what the Diuell is whom you ſerue? as alſo how he began, and how farre his power and authoritie extends?

Perſie, / beleeue me, thou ſhriveſt me very neere in this latter demaund, which concerneth vs more deeply than the former, and may worke vs more damage than thou art aware of: yet in hope thou wilt conceale what I tell thee, I wil lay open our whole eſtate plainly and ſimply vnto thee as it is: but firſt I will begin with the opinions of former times, & ſo haſten forward to that *manifeſte verum* that thou ſeekeſt. Some men there be that, building too much vpon reaſon, perſwade themſelues that there are no Diuells at all, but that this word *Dæmon* is ſuch another morall of miſchiefe, as the Poets Dame Fortune is of miſhap: for as vnder the fiction of this blinde Goddeſſe we ayme at the folly of Princes and great men in diſpoſing of honors, that oftentimes preferre fooles and diſgrace wiſe men, and alter their fauours in turning of an eye, as Fortune turns her wheele: ſo vnder the perſon of this olde *Gnathonicall* companion, called the Diuell, we ſhrowd all ſubtiltie, maſking vnder the name of ſimplicitie, all painted holines devouring widowes houſes, all gray-headed Foxes clad in ſheepes garments; ſo that the Diuell (as they make it) is onely a peſtilent humour in a man,

of pleaſure, profit, or policie, that violently carries him away to vanitie, villanie, or monſtrous hypocriſie: vnder vanitie I comprehend not onely all vaine Arts and ſtudies whatſoeuer, but alſo diſhonorable prodigality, vntemperate venerie, and that hatefull ſinne of ſelfe-loue, which is ſo common among vs: vnder villany I comprehend murder, treaſon, theft, couſnage, cut-throat couetiſe, and ſuch like: laſtly, vnder hypocriſie, al Machiauiliſme, puritaniſme, & outward gloaſing with a mans enemie, and proteſting friendſhip to him I hate, and meane to harme, all vnder-hand cloaking of bad actions with Common-wealth pretences: and, finally, all Italionate conueyances, as to kill a man, and then mourne for him, *quaſi vero* it was not by my conſent, to be a ſlaue to him that hath iniur'd me, and kiſſe his feete for opportunities of reuenge, to be ſeuere in puniſhing offenders, that none might haue the benefite of ſuch meanes but myſelfe, to vſe men for my purpoſe & then caſt them off, to ſeeke his / deſtruction that knowes my ſecrets: and ſuch as I haue imployed in any murther or ſtratagem, to ſet them priuilie together by the eares, to ſtab each other mutually, for fear of bewraying me: or, if that faile, to hire them to humor one another in ſuch courſes as may bring them both to the gallowes. Theſe, and a thouſand more ſuch ſleights, hath hypocriſie learned by trauailing ſtrange

Countries. I will not ſay ſhe puts them in practiſe here in *England,* although there be as many falſe brethren & craftie knaues here amongſt vs as in any place: witnes the poore Miller of *Cambridge,* that, hauing no roome for his hen-loft but the Teſtor of his bed, and it was not poſſible for any hungrie Poultrers to come there, but they muſt ſtand vpon the one ſide of it, and ſo not ſteale them but with great hazard; had in one night notwithſtanding (when hee and his wife were a ſnorting) all the whole progenie of their Pullerie taken away, and neither of them heard anie ſturring: it is an odde tricke, but what of that, we muſt not ſtand vpon it, for wee haue grauer matters in hand than the ſtealing of Hennes. Hypocriſie, I remember, was our Text, which was one of the chiefe morrall Diuels, our late Doctors affirme to bee moſt buſie in theſe dayes: and buſie it is, in trueth, more than anye Bee that I knowe: now you talke of a Bee, Ile tell you a tale of a Battledore.

The Beare on a time, beeing chiefe Burgomaſter of all the Beaſts vnder the Lyon, gan thinke with himſelfe how hee might ſurfet in pleaſure, or beſt huſband his Authoritie to enlardge his delight and contentment. With that hee beganne to prye and to ſmell through euery corner of the Forreſt for praye, to haue a thouſande imaginations with him-

ſelfe what daintie morſell he was maſter of, and yet had not taſted: whole Heards of ſheepe had hee deuoured, and was not ſatisfied; fat Oxen, Heyfers, Swine, Calues, and young Kiddes, were his ordinarie vyands: he longed for horſe-fleſh, and went preſently to a medowe, where a fat Cammell was grazing, whom, fearing to encounter with force, becauſe he was a huge beaſt and well ſhod, / he thought to betray vnder the colour of demaunding homage, hoping that, as he ſhould ſtoop to doo him truage, he might ſeaze vpon his throat, and ſtifle him before he ſhould be able to recouer himſelfe from his falſe embrace: but therin he was deceiued: for, comming vnto this ſtately Beaſt with this imperious meſſage, in ſtead of doing homage vnto him, he lifted vp one of his hindmoſt heeles, and ſtroake him ſuch a blowe on the forhead that hee ouerthrew him. Thereat not a little moou'd, and enrag'd, that he ſhould be ſo diſhonored by his inferiour, as he thought, he conſulted with the Ape how he might be reuẽged. The Ape, abhorring him by nature, becauſe he ouer-lookt him ſo Lordly, and was by ſo many degrees greater than he was, aduiſed him to digge a pit with his pawes right in the way where this big boand Gentleman ſhould paſſe, that ſo ſtumbling and falling in, he might lightly ſkip on his backe, and bridle him, and then hee [could] come and ſeaze on

him at his pleasure. No sooner was this perswaded thã performed: for enuie, that is neuer idle, could not sleep in his wrath, or ouer-slip the least opportunitie, till he had seene the confusion of his enemie. Alas, goodly Creature, that thou mightest no longer liue. What auaileth thy gentlenes, thy prowesse, or the plentifull pasture wherein thou wert fed, since malice triumphs ouer al thou commandest? Well may the Mule rise vp in armes, and the Asse bray at the Authors of thy death: yet shall their furie be fatall to themselues, before it take hold on these Traitours. What needeth more words? the deuourer feedes on his captiue, and is gorged with bloud. But as auarice and crueltie are euermore thirstie, so far'd it with this hungrie Usurper: for hauing flesht his ambition with this treacherous conquest, he past along through a groue, where a Heard of Deare were a ranging; whom, when he had stedfastly surveyed from the fattest to the leanest, hee singled out one of the fairest of the companie, with whom he meant to close up his stomacke instead of cheese: but because the Woodmen were euer stirring thereabout, and it was not possible for one of his coate to commit such outrage vndescried, and that, if/he were espied, his life were in perill; though not with the Lyon, whose eyes he coulde blinde as he list, yet with the lesser sort of the brutish Comminaltie, whom no flattrie

might pacifie. Therefore, he determined ſlylie and priuilie to poyſon the ſtreame where this iolly Foreſter wonted to drink; & as he determined, ſo he did: whereby it fell out, that when the Sunne was aſcended to his height, & all the nimble Citizens of the Wood betooke them to their Laire, this youthfull Lord of the Lawnds, all faint and malcontent, (as prophecying his neere approaching miſhap by his languiſhing) with a lazie, wallowing pace, ſtrayed aſide from the reſt of his fellowſhip, and betooke him all careleſſly to the corrupted fountaine that was prepared for his Funerall. Ah, woe is me, this poyſon is pitiles. What need I ſay more, ſince you know it is death with whom it encounters. And yet cannot all this expence of life, ſet a period to inſatiable Murther: but ſtill it hath ſome anuile to worke vpon, and ouercaſts all oppoſite proſperitie, that may any way ſhadow his glorie. Too long it were to reherſe all the practiſes of this ſauadge blood-hunter: how he aſſailed the Unicorne as he ſlept in his den, and tore the hart out of his breaſt ere he could awake: how he made the leſſer beaſts lie in wait one for the other, and the Crocodyle to coape with the Baſiliſke, that when they had enterchaungeably weakned each other, hee might come and inſult ouer them both as he liſt. But theſe were leſſer matters, which daily vſe had worne out of mens mouthes, and

he himſelf had ſo cuſtomably practiſed, that often exerciſe had quite abrogated the opinion of ſinne, & impudencie throughly cōfirmd an vndaunted defiance of vertue in his face. Yet new-fangled luſt, that in time is wearie of welfare, & will bee as ſoone cloyed with too much eaſe and delicacie, as Pouertie with labour and ſcarcitie, at length brought him out of loue with this greedie, beſtiall humour: and now he affected a milder varietie in his diet: he had bethought him what a pleaſant thing it was to eate nothing but honie another while, and what great ſtore of it there was in that Countrey.

Now / did he caſt in his head, that if hee might bring the huſbandmen of the ſoyle in opinion that they might buy honey cheaper than being at ſuch charges in keeping of Bees, or that thoſe bees which they kept were moſt of thē drones, & what ſhould ſuch idle drones doe with ſuch ſtately Hyues, or lye ſucking at ſuch precious Honnicombes; that if they were tooke away from them, and diſtributed equally abroad, they would releeue a great many of painfull labourers that had need of them, and would continually liue ſeruiceable at their commaund, if they might enioy ſuch a benefite. Nay more, let them giue Waſpes but onely the wax, and diſpoſe of the honnie as they thinke good, and they ſhall humme and buzze a thouſand times lowder than

they, and haue the hiue fuller at the yeeres end (with yong ones, I meane) than the Bees are wont in ten yere.

To broach this deuice, the Foxe was addreſt like a ſhepheards dogge, and promiſt to haue his Pattent ſeald, to bee the Kings Poulterer for euer, if hee could bring it to paſſe. Faith, quoth he, and Ile put it in a venter, let it hap how it will. With that he grew in league with an old Camelion, that could put on all ſhapes, and imitate any colour, as occaſion ſerued, and him he addreſt, ſometime like an Ape to make ſport, & then like a Crocodile to weepe, ſometime like a Serpent to ſting, and by and by like a Spaniel to fawne, that with theſe ſundrie formes, (applyde to mens variable humors) he might perſwade the world he ment as he ſpake, and only intended their good, when he thought nothing leſſe. In this diſguiſe, theſe two deceiuers went vp & downe, and did much harme vnder the habite of Simplicitie, making the poore ſilly Swaines beleeue they were cunning Phiſitions, and well ſeene in all Cures, that they could heale any maladie, though neuer ſo daungerous, & reſtore a man to life that had been dead two dayes, onely by breathing vpon him: aboue all things they perſwaded them, that the honny that their Bees brought forth, was poyſonous and corrupt, by reaſon that thoſe floures and hearbs, out of which

it was gathered and exhaled, were ſubiect to the infection of euery Spi / der and venimous Canker, and not a loathſome Toade (how deteſtable ſoeuer) but repoſde himſelfe vnder theyr ſhadow, and lay ſucking at their rootes continually: wheras in other Countries, no noiſome or poiſnous creature might liue, by reaſon of the imputed goodnes of the Soyle, or carefull diligence of the Gardners aboue ours, as for example, *Scotland*, *Denmarke*, & ſome more pure parts of the 17 Prouinces. Theſe perſwaſions made the good honeſt Huſbandmen to pauſe, and miſtruſt their owne wits very much, in nouriſhing ſuch dangerous Animals, but * yet, I know not how antiquitie and cuſtome ſo ouer-rulde their feare, that none would reſolue to abandon them on the ſodaine, til they ſaw a further inconuenience: whereby my two cunning Philoſophers were driuen to ſtudie Galen anew, and ſeeke ſplenatiue ſimples, to purge their popular Patients of the opinion of their olde Traditions and Cuſtomes: which, how they wrought with the moſt part that had leaſt wit, it were a world to tell. For now nothing was Canonicall but what they ſpake, no man would conuerſe with his wife but firſt aſkt their aduiſe, nor pare his nayles, nor cut his beard, without their preſcription: ſo ſenceles, ſo wauering is the light vnconſtaunt Multitude, that will daunce after euerie

* Interdum vulgus rectum videt, et vbi peccat.

mans pype; and ſooner prefer a blinde harper that can ſqueake out a new horne-pipe, than *Alcinous* or *Appolloes* varietie, that imitates the eight ſtraines of the *Doryan* melodie. I ſpeak this to amplifie ỹ nouell folly of the headlong vulgar, that making their eyes and eares vaſſailes to the legerdemaine of theſe iugling Mountebanks, are preſently drawne to contemne Art and experience, in compariſon of the ignorance of a number of audacious ideots. The Fox can tell a faire tale, and couers all his knauerie vnder conſcience, and the Camelion can addreſſe himſelf like an Angell whenſoeuer he is diſpoſed to worke miſchief by myracles: but yet in the end, their ſecret drifts are laide open, and *Linceus* eyes, that ſee through ſtone walles, haue made a paſſage into the cloſe couerture of their hypocriſie.

For one daye, as theſe two Deuiſers were plotting by / themſelues how to driue all the Bees from their Honnycombes, by putting wormewood in their Hyues, and ſtrewing Henbane and Rue in euery place where they reſort: a Flye that paſt by, and heard all their talke, ſtomaking the Foxe of olde, for that he had murthred ſo many of his kindred with his flayle-driuing taile, went preſently and buzd in *Linceus* eares, the whole purport of their malice: who awaking his hundred eyes at theſe vnexpected tidings gan purſue them wherſoeuer

they went, & trace their intents as they proceeded into action, ſo that ere halfe their baytes were caſt forth, they were apprehended and impriſoned, and all their whole counſaile detected. But long ere this, the Beare, impatient of delayes, and conſum'd with an inward griefe in himſelfe, that hee might not haue his will of a fat Hinde that out-ran him, he went into the woods all melancholie, and there dyed for pure anger: leauing the Foxe and the Camelion to the deſtinie of their deſert, and mercie of their Judges. How they ſcapte I knowe not, but ſome ſaye they were hangd, and ſo weele leaue them.

How lik'ſt thou of my tale, friend *Perſie?* Haue I not deſcribed a right earthly Diuell vnto thee, in the diſcourſe of this bloodie minded Beare? or canſt thou not attract the true image of Hypocriſie, vnder the deſcription of the Foxe and the Camelion?

Yes, very well (quoth I); but I would gladly haue you returne to your firſt ſubiect, ſince you haue mooued doubts in my minde, which you haue not yet diſcuſt.

Of the ſundrie opinions of the Diuell thou meaneſt, and them that imagine him to haue no exiſtence, of which ſort are they that firſt inuented the Prouerbe, *Homo homini Dæmon:* meaning thereby, that that power which we call the Diuell,

and the miniſtring Spirits belonging to his kingdome are tales and fables, and meere bugge-beares to ſcarre boyes: and that there is no ſuch eſſence at all, but onely it is a terme of large content, deſcribing the rancor, grudge, & bad dealing of one man towards another: as, namely, when one friend talkes with another ſubtilly, and ſeekes to dyue into / his commoditie, that hee may depriue him of it craftilie; when the ſonne ſeeks the death of the father, that he may be infeoffed in his wealth: & the ſtepdame goes about to make away her ſonne-in-law, that her children may inherit: whē brothers fall at iarres for portions, & ſhall, by open murther or priuy conſpiracy, attempt the confuſion of each other, only to ioyne houſe to houſe, and vnite two Liuelihoods in one: when the ſeruant ſhal rob his Maſter, and men put in truſt, ſtart away from their oathes and vowes, they care not how.

In ſuch caſes & many more, may one man be ſayd to bee a diuell to another, & this is the ſecond opinion. The third is that of *Plato*, who not onely affirmeth that there are diuels, but deuided them into three ſorts, euery one a degree of dignitie aboue the other; the firſt are thoſe, whoſe bodies are cōpact of ẏ pureſt ayrie Element, combined with ſuch tranſparant threeds, that neither they doo partake ſo much fire as ſhould make them

viſible to ſight, or haue any ſuch affinitie with the earth, as they are able to be preſt or toucht: & theſe he ſetteth in the higheſt incomprehenſible degree of heauen. The ſecond, he maketh theſe, whom *Apuleius* doth call reaſonable Creatures, paſſiue in minde and eternall in Time, being thoſe *apoſtata* ſpirites that rebelled with *Belzebub*: whoſe bodies, before their fall, were bright and pure all like to the former: but, after their tranſgreſſion, they were obſcured in a thicke, fiery matter, and euer after aſſigned to darknes. The third, he attributes to thoſe men that, by ſome diuine knowledge or vnderſtanding, ſeeming to aſpyre aboue mortalitie, are called *Dæmona*, (that is) *Gods*: for this word *Dæmon* contayneth eyther, and *Homer* in euery place doth vſe it both for that omnipotent power that was before al things, and the euill ſpirite that leadeth men to error: ſo doth *Syrianus* teſtifie, that *Plato* was called *Dæmon*, becauſe he diſputed of deepe Common-wealth matters, greatly auailable to the benefite of his Countrey: and *Ariſtotle* becauſe he wrote at large of al things ſubiect to mouing and ſence. Then belike (quoth I) you make this word *Dæmon*, a capable name of Gods, of men, and of diuells, which is farre diſtant / from the ſcope of my demand: for I doo only inquire of the diuel, as this common appellation of the Diuel, ſignifieth a malignant ſpirit, enemie to man-

kinde, and a hater of God and all goodnes. Thoſe are the ſecond kinde, ſaid he, vſually termed detracters, or accuſers, that are in knowledge infinite, inſomuch as, by the quicknes of their wits & agreeable mixtures of the Elements, they ſo comprehend thoſe ſeminarie vertues to men vnknown, that thoſe things which, in courſe of time or by growing degrees, Nature of itſelfe can effect, they, by their art and ſkil in haſtning the works of Nature, can contriue and compaſſe in a moment: as the Magitians of *Pharao*, who, whereas Nature, not without ſome interpoſition of time and ordinarie cauſes of conception, brings forth frogs, ſerpents, or any liuing thing els, they, without all ſuch diſtance of ſpace, or circumſcription of ſeaſon, euen in a thought, as ſoone as their King commanded, couered the land of *Ægipt* with this monſtrous encreaſe. Of the originall of vs ſpirites, the Scripture moſt amply maketh mention, namely, that *Lucifer*, (before his fall) an Arch-angel, was a cleere body, compact of the pureſt and brighteſt of the ayre, but after his fall hee was vayled with a groſer ſubſtance, and tooke a new forme of darke and thicke ayre, which he ſtill reteyneth. Neither did he onely fall, when hee ſtroue with *Michael*, but drewe a number of Angels to his faction; who ioynt partakers of his proud reuolt, were likewiſe partakers of his puniſhment, and all thruſt

out of heauen together by one iudgement: who euer ſince doo nothing but wander about the Earth, and tempt and enforce frayle men to enterpriſe all wickednes that may be, and commit moſt horrible and abominable things againſt God. Meruaile not that I diſcouer ſo much of our eſtate vnto thee: for the Scripture hath more than I mention, as S. *Peter*, where he ſayth that *God ſpared not his Angels that ſinned:* and in an other place, wher he ſaith that *they are bound with the chains of darknes, and throwne headlong into hell:* which is not meant of any locall place in the earth, or vnder the waters; for, as *Auſtin* affirmeth, wee doo inhabite the Region vnder the Moone, / and haue the thick aire aſſigned vs as a priſon, from whence we may with ſmall labour caſt our nets where wee liſt: yet are we not ſo at our diſp[o]ſition, but that we are ſtill commanded by *Lucifer*, (although we are in number infinite) who retaining that pride wherewith he arrogantly affected the Maieſtie of God, hath ſtill his miniſtring Angels about him, whom he employes in ſeuerall charges, to ſeduce & deceiue as him ſeemeth beſt: as thoſe ſpirites which the Latins call *Iouios* and *Antemeridianos*, to ſpeake out of Oracles, and make the people worſhip them as Gods, when they are nothing but deluding Diuels, that couet to haue a falſe Deitie aſcribed vnto them, & draw men vnto their loue by won-

ders & prodegies, that els would hate them deadly, if they knewe their maleuolence and enuy. Such a monarchizing ſpirit it was that ſayd vnto Chriſt, *If thou wilt fall downe, and worſhip me, I will giue thee all the Kingdomes of the earth:* and ſuch a ſpirit it was that poſſeſt the *Libian Sapho,* and the Emperour *Diocleſian,* who thought it the bleſſedſt thing that might be to be called God. For the one being weary of humane honor, & inſpired with a ſupernaturall folly, taught little birds, that were capable of ſpeech, to pronounce diſtinctly, *Magnus Deus Sapho;* that is to ſay, *A great god is Sapho:* which words, when they had learned readily to carroll, and were perfect in their note, he let them flie at randome, that ſo disperſing themſelues euery where, they might induce the people to account of him as a God. The other was ſo arrogant, that he made his ſubiects fal proſtrate on their faces, and lifting vp their hands to him as to heauen, adore him as omnipotent.

The ſecond kind of Diuels, which he moſt imployeth, are thoſe northerne *Marcij,* called the ſpirits of reuenge, & the authors of maſſacres, & ſeedsmen of miſchiefe: for they haue commiſſion to incenſe men to rapines, ſacriledge, theft, murther wrath, furie, and all manner of cruelties, & they commaund certaine of the Southern ſpirits (as

ſlaues) to wayt vpon them, as alſo great *Arioch*, that is tearmed the ſpirite of reuenge.

Theſe / know how to diſſociate the loue of brethren, and to break wedlock bands with ſuch violence, that they may not be vnited, & are predominant in many other domeſticall mutinies: of whom, if you liſt to heare more, read the 39 of *Eccleſiaſticus*. The prophet *Eſay* maketh mention of another Spirit, ſent by God to the *Egvptians*, to make them ſtray and wander out of the way, that is to ſay, the Spirite of lying, which they call *Bolychym*. The ſpirits that entice men to gluttonie & luſt, are certaine watry ſpirits of the Weſt, and certaine Southerne ſpirits as *Nefrach* and *Kelen*, which for the moſt part proſecute vnlawfull loues, and cheriſh all vnnatural deſires: they wander through lakes, fiſh-ponds, and fennes, & ouerwhelme ſhips, caſt boates vpon ankers, and drowne men that are ſwimming: therefore are they counted the moſt peſtilent, troubleſome, and guilefull ſpirits that are: for by the helpe of *Alynach*, a Spirit of the Weſt, they will raiſe ſtormes, cauſe earthquakes, whirlwindes, rayne, haile or ſnow in the cleereſt day that is: and if euer they appeare to any man, they come in womens apparell. The ſpirits of the aire will mixe themſelues with thunder & lightening, and ſo infect the Clyme where they raiſe any tempeſt, that ſodainly great mortalitie ſhal enſue to

the inhabitants from the infectious vapors which arise from their motions: of such S. *Iohn* maketh mention in the ninth of the Apocalips; their patrone is *Mereris*, who beareth chief rule about the middle time of the day.

The spirits of the fire haue their mansions vnder the regions of the Moone, that whatsoeuer is committed to their charge they may there execute, as in their proper cōsistorie, from whence they cannot start. The spirits of the Earth keepe, for the most part, in Forrests and woods, and doo hunters much noyance, and sometime in the broad fields, where they lead trauellers out of ẏ right way, or fright men with deformed apparitions, or make them run mad through excessiue melancholy, like *Aiax Telamonius*, & so proue hurtfull to themselues, and dangerous to others: of this number the chiefe are *Samaab* and *Achymael*, spirits of the East, that haue no power to doo any great harme, by reason / of the vnconstancie of their affections. The vnder-earth spirits, are such as lurk in dens & little cauernes of the earth, and hollow creuises of mountaines, that they may dyue into the bowels of the earth at their pleasures: these dig metals and watch treasures, which they continually transport from place to place, that none should haue vse of them: they raise windes that vomit flames, & shake the foundation of buildings, they daunce in

rounds in pleaſant Launds, and greene meddowes, with noyſes of muſick and minſtralſie, & vaniſh away when any comes neere them: they will take vpon them any ſimilitude but of a woman, and terrifie men in the likenes of dead mens ghoſts in the night time: and of this qualitie & condition the Necromancers hold *Gaziel*, *Fegor*, and *Anarazel*, Southerne ſpirits, to be. Beſides, there are yet remaining certaine lying ſpirits, who (although all bee giuen to lie by nature) yet are they more prone to that vice than the reſt, being named *Pythoniſts*, of whom *Apollo* comes to be called *Pythæus*: they haue a prince aſwel as other ſpirits, of whom mention is made in the 3 booke of Kings, when he ſaith he will be a lying ſpirit in the mouth of all *Ahabs* prophets: from which thoſe ſpirites of iniquitie doo little differ, which are called the veſſels of wrath, that aſſiſt *Belial* (whom they interpret a ſpirite without yoake or controuler) in all damnable deuiſes and inuentions. *Plato* reports them to bee ſuch as firſt deviſed Cardes and dice, and I am in the mind, that the Monke was of the ſame order, that found out the vſe of Gunpouder, and the engines of warre thereto belonging. Thoſe that write of theſe matters call this *Belial Chodar* of the Eaſt, that hath all witches and coniurers ſpirits vnder his iuriſdiction, & giues them leaue to helpe Juglers in their tricks,

& *Simon Magus* to doo miracles; allwaies prouided they bring a ſoule home to their Maſter for his hyre.

Yet are not theſe all, for there are ſpirits called ſpies & tale-cariers, obedient to *Aſcaroth*, whom the Greekes call *Daimona*, and S. *Iohn*, *The accuſer of the brethren:* alſo tempters, who for their interrupting vs in al our good actions are cald our euill Angels. Aboue all things they hate the light, and / reioyce in darknes, diſquieting men maliciouſly in the night, & ſometimes hurt them by pinching them, or blaſting them as they ſleepe: but they are not ſo much to be dreaded as other ſpirits, becauſe if a man ſpeak to them, they flee away, and will not abide. Such a ſpirit *Plinius Secundus* telleth of, that vſed to haunt a goodly houſe in *Athens* that *Athenodorus* hired; and ſuch another *Suetonius* deſcribeth to haue long houered in *Lamianus* garden, where *Caligula* lay-buried, who for becauſe he was onely couered with a fewe clods, and vnreuerently throwne amongſt the weedes, hee merueilouſly diſturbed the owners of the garden, & would not let them reſt in their beds, till by his Siſters, returned from baniſhment, he was taken vp, & entoombed ſolemnly. *Pauſanias* avoucheth (amongſt other experiments) that a certaine ſpirit called *Zazilus* doth feed vpon dead mens corſes, that are not deeply enterred as they ought:

which to confirme, there is a wonderfull accident ſet downe in the Daniſh hiſtorie of *Aſuitus* and *Aſmundus*, who, being two famous frends (well knowen in thoſe parts) vowd one to another, that which of thē two outliued the other, ſhould be buried aliue with his friend that firſt died. In ſhort ſpace *Aſuitus* fell ſicke and yeelded to nature: *Aſmundus*, compelled by the oath of his friendſhip, took none but his horſe and his dog with him, and tranſported the dead bodie into a vaſt caue vnder the earth, & ther determined (hauing victualed himſelfe for a long time) to finiſh his dayes in darknes, and neuer depart from him that he loued ſo dearly.

Thus ſhut vp, and encloſed in the bowels of the earth, it hapned *Eritus*, King of *Sweueland*, to paſſe that way with his armie, not full two moneths after: who coming to the toombe of *Aſuitus*, and ſuſpecting it a place where treaſure was hidden, cauſed his Pioneers with their ſpades and mattockes to dig it vp: whereupon was diſcouered the loathſome body of *Aſmundus*, al to beſmeared with dead mens filth, & his viſage moſt vgly and ffearefull; which imbrued with congeald blood, and eaten and torne like a raw vlcer, made him ſo gaſtly to behold, that all the lookers on were affrighted. He, ſeeing himſelfe / reſtored to light, and ſo many amazed men ſtand about him, re-

ſolued their vncertaine perplexitie in theſe tearmes. Why ſtand you aſtoniſht at my vnuſual deformities? when no liuing man conuerſeth with the dead but is thus disfigured. But other cauſes haue effected this alteration in me: for I know not what audacious ſpirit, ſent by *Gorgon* from the deep, hath not onely moſt rauenouſly deuoured my horſe and my dog, but alſo hath layd his hungry pawes vpon mee, and, tearing downe my cheekes as you ſee, hath likewiſe rent away one of mine eares. Hence it is that my mangled ſhape ſeemes ſo monſtrous, and my humane image obſcured with gore in this wiſe. Yet ſcaped not this fell Harpie from mee vnreuengd: for, as he aſſayld me, I raught his head from his ſhoulders, and ſheathd my ſword in his body. Haue ſpirites their viſible bodies, ſaid I, that may be toucht, wounded, or pierſt? Beleeue me, I neuer heard that in my life before this. Why, quoth he, although in their proper eſſence they are creatures incorporal, yet can they take vpon thē the induments of any liuing body whatſoeuer, and transforme themſelues into all kinde of ſhapes, whereby they may more eaſily deceiue our ſhallow wits and ſences. So teſtifies *Baſilius*, that they can put on a materiall forme when they liſt. *Socrates* affirmeth that his *Dæmon* did oftentimes talke with him, & that he ſaw & felt him many times. But *Marcus Cherone-*

ſius (a wonderfull diſcouerer of Diuels) writeth, that thoſe bodies which they aſſume are diſtinguiſht by no difference of ſex, becauſe they are ſimple, and the diſcernance of ſex belongs to bodies compound: yet are they flexible, motiue, and apt for any configuration; but not al of them alike; for the ſpirits of the Fire and Aire haue this power aboue the reſt. The ſpirits of the water haue ſlow bodies reſembling birds and women, of which kinde the *Naiades* & *Nereides* are much celebrated amongſt Poets. Neuertheles, howeuer they are reſtrayned to their ſeueral ſimilitudes, it is certaine that all of them deſire no forme or figure ſo much, as the likeneſſe of a man, & doo thinke themſelues in heauen when they are infeoft in that hue: wherefore I know no / other reaſon but this, that man is the neereſt repreſentatiō to God, in ſo much as the Scripture ſaith, *He made man after his own likeneſſe and image:* and they affecting, by reaſon of their pride, to be as like God as they may, contend moſt ſeriouſly to ſhroud themſelues vnder that habit.

But, I pray, tell mee this, whether are there (as *Porphirius* holdeth) good ſpirits aſwell as euill? Nay, certainely (quoth he) we are al euill, let *Porphirius*, *Proclus*, *Apuleius*, or the *Platoniſts* diſpute to the contrary as long as they will: which I will confirme to thy capacity by the names that are euerywhere giuen vs in the Scripture: for the

diuell, which is the *Summum genus* to vs all, is called *Diabolus quaſi deorſum ruens*, that is to ſay, falling downward, as hee that aſpyring too high, was thrown from the top of felicitie to the loweſt pit of deſpayre: and ſathan, that is to ſay, an Aduerſary, who, for the corruption of his malice, oppoſeth himſelfe euer againſt God, who is the chiefeſt good. In *Iob Behemoth* and *Leuiathan*, and in the 9. of the *Apocalips*, *Apolyon*, that is to ſay, a Subuerter: becauſe the foundation of thoſe vertues, which our high Maker hath planted in our ſoules, hee vndermineth and ſubuerteth. A Serpent for his poyſoning, a Lyon for his deuouring: a Furnace, for that by his malice the Elect are tryed, who are veſſels of wrath and ſaluation. In *Eſay* a Syren, a Lamia, a Scrich-oule, an Eſtridge. In the Pſalmes, an Adder, a Baſiliſke, a Dragon. And laſtly, in the Goſpel, Mammon, Prince of this world, and the Gouernour of darknes: ſo that, by the whole courſe of condemning names that are giuen vs, and no one inſtance of any fauourable tytle beſtowed vpon vs, I poſitiuely ſet downe that all ſpirits are euill. Now, whereas the Diuines attribute vnto vs theſe good and euill ſpirits, the good to guide vs from euil, and the euil to draw vs from goodneſſe, they are not called ſpirits, but Angells, of which ſort was *Raphaell*, the good Angel of *Tobias*, who exilde the euill ſpirit *Aſmo-*

dius into the defart of *Ægipt*, that he might be the more fecure from his temptation. Since wee haue entred thus far into the diuels common-wealth, I befeech you certifie me thus much, / whether haue they power to hurt granted them from god or from themfelues: can they hurt as much as they wil? Not fo, quoth hee, for although that diuells be moft mightie fpirites, yet can they not hurt but permiffiuelie, or by fome fpeciall difpenfation: as when a man is faln into the ftate of an outlaw, the Lawe difpenfeth with them that kils him, & the Prince excludes him from the protection of a fubiect, fo, when a man is a relaps from God and his Lawes, God with-drawes his prouidence from watching ouer him, & authorifeth the deuil, as his inftrument, to affault him and torment him, fo that whatfoeuer he dooth, is *Limitata poteftate*, as one faith: infomuch as a haire cannot fall from our heads, without the will of our heauenlie Father.

The diuell could not deceiue *Achabs* prophets till he was licenfed by God, nor exercife his tyranie ouer *Iob*, til he had giuen him commiffion, nor enter into the heard of fwine, til Chrift bad them goe. Therefore, need you not feare the diuell any whit, as long as you are in the fauour of God, who raineth him fo ftraight, that except he let him loofe he can doo nothing. This manlike proportion,

which I now retaine, is but a thinge of ſuffrance, granted vnto me to plague ſuch men as hunt after ſtrife, & are delighted with variance. It may be ſo very well, but whether haue you that ſkil to foretell thinges to come, that is aſcribed vnto you? We haue (quoth he) ſometimes: not that we are priuie to the eternall counſel of god, but for that by the ſenſe of our ayrie bodies, we haue a more refined faculty of foreſeeing, than men poſſibly can haue, that are chained to ſuch heauie earthlie moulder; or els for that by the incomparable pernicitie of thoſe ayrie bodies, we not onely outſtrip the ſwiftnes of men, beaſts and birds, wherby we may be able to attain to the knowledge of things ſooner, than thoſe that by the dulnes of their earthlie ſenſe com a great waie behind vs. Herunto may we adioine our long experience in the courſe of things from the beginning of the world, which men want, and, therfore, cannot haue that deepe coniecture that we haue. Nor is our knowledge any more than coniecture: for preſcience only belongeth to God, & that geſſe / that we haue proceedeth from the compared diſpoſition of heauenly and erthlie bodies, by whoſe long obſerued temperature, we doo diuine manie times, as it happens: & therefore doo we take vpon vs to prophecy, that we may purchaſe eſtimation to our names, & bringe men in admiration with that we

do, and so be counted for Gods. The myracles wee work are partly contriued by illusion, and partly assisted by that supernatural skil we haue in the experience of nature aboue al other creatures. But against these illusions of your subtletie & vain terrors you inflict, what is our chiefe refuge? I shalbe accounted a foolish Diuel anon, if I bewray the secrets of our kingdome, as I haue begun: yet speak I no more than learned Clarks haue written, and asmuch as they haue set downe will I shew thee.

Origin, in his treatise against *Celsus*, saith, there is nothing better for him that is vexed with spirits, then the naming of *Iesu* the true God, for he auoucheth, he hath seen diuers driuen out of mens bodies by that meanes. *Athanasius* in his booke *De varijs quæstionibus* saith, The presentest remedie against the inuasion of euill spirits, is the beginning of the 67. Psalme, *Exurgat Deus, & dissipentur inimici ejus*. *Cyprian* counsels men to adiure spirits onely by the name of the true God. Some hold that fire is a preseruatiue for this purpose, because when any spirit appeareth, the lights by little and little goe out, as it were of their owne accord, and the tapers are by degrees extinguisht. Others by inuocating vpon God, by the name of *Vehiculum ignis superioris*, and often rehearsing the Articles of our faith. A third sort are perswaded that the

brandiſhing of ſwordes is good for this purpoſe, becauſe *Homer* faineth, that *Vliſſes*, ſacrificing to his mother, wafted his ſword in the aire to chaſe the ſpirits from the bloude of the ſacrifice. And *Sybylla*, conducting *Aeneas* to hell, begins hir charmes in this ſort.

Procul, O procul, eſte prophani:
Tuque juvande viam, vaginaque eripe ferrum.

Philoſtratus reporteth, that he and his companions meeting that diuel which artiſts entitle *Apolonius*, as they came one night from banquetting, with ſuch termes as he is curſt in / holy writ, they made him run awaie howling. Manie in this caſe extoll perfume of *Calamentum pæonia, Menta palma Chriſti*, and *Appius*. A number prefer the carying of red Corrall about them, or of *Arthemiſia hypericon, Ruta verbena:* & to this effect manie doo vſe the jyngling of keyes, the ſound of the harp, and the claſhing of armor. Some of old time put great ſuperſtition in characters, curiouſly engraued in their *Pentagonon*, but they are all vaine, & will do no good, if they be otherwiſe vſed than as ſignes of couenaunt betweene the diuell and them. Nor doo I affirme all the reſt to be vnfallible preſcriptions, though ſometime they haue their vſe: but that the onelie aſſured waie to reſiſt their attempts is prayer and faith, gainſt which all the

diuells in hell cannot preuaile. Inough, gentle ſpirit, I wil importune thee no farther, but commit this Supplication to thy care: which, if thou deliuer accordinglie, thou ſhalt at thy returne haue mor[e] of my cuſtome: for by that time I wil haue finiſhed certain letters to diuers Orators & Poets, diſperced in your dominions. That as occation ſhal ſerue, but nowe I muſt take leaue of you, for it is Terme time, and I haue ſome buſines. A Gentleman (a frend of mine, that I neuer ſaw before) ſtaies for me, and is like to be vndone if I come not in to beare witnes on his ſide: wherefore *Bazilez manus* till our next meeting.

Gentle Reader, *tandem aliquando* I am at leaſure to talke to thee. I dar ſay thou haſt cald me a hundred times dolt for this ſenſeles diſcourſe: it is no matter, thou doſt but as I haue done by a number in my dayes. For who can abide a ſcuruie pedling Poet to pluck a man by the ſleeue at euerie third ſtep in *Paules* Churchyard, and when hee comes in to ſeruey his wares, theres nothing but purgations and vomits wrapt vp in waſt paper. It were verie good the dogwhipper in *Paules* would haue a care of this in his vnſauerie viſitation euerie Saterday: for it is dangerous for ſuch of the Queenes liedge people, as ſhall take a viewe of them faſting.

Looke / to it, you Bookſellers & Stationers, and

let not your ſhops be infected with anie ſuch gooſe gyblets, or ſtinking garbadge as the Jygs of news-mongers, and eſpeciallie ſuch of you as frequent Weſtminſter hall, let them be circumſpect what dunghill papers they bring thither: for one bad phamphlet is inough to raiſe a dampe that may poyſon a whole Terme, or at the leaſt a number, of poore Clyents, that haue no money to preuent il aire by breaking their faſts ere they come thether. Not a baſe Inck-dropper, or ſcuruy plodder at *Nouerint*, but nailes his aſſes eares on euerie poaſt, & comes off with long *Circumquaque* to the Gentle-man Readers, yea, the moſt excerementary diſh-lickers of lerning are grown ſo valiant in impu-dence, that now they ſet vp their faces (like Turks) of gray paper, to be ſpet at for ſiluer games in Finſburie fields. Whilſt I am thus talking, me thinkes I heare one ſay, What a fop is this, he entitles his Booke a *Supplication to the Diuell*, & doth nothing but raile on ideots, and tells a ſtorie of the nature of ſpirits. Haue patience, good ſir, and weele come to you by and by. Is it my Title you finde fault with? Why, haue you not ſeene a Towne ſurnamed by the principall houſe in the Towne, or a Noble man deriue his Baronie from a little village where he hath leaſt land? So fareth it by me in chriſtening of my booke. But ſome will obiect, wheretoo tends this diſcouerie of diuels,

or how is it induced? Forſooth, if thou wilt needs know my reſon, this it is. I bring *Pierce Penileſſe* to queſtion with the diuel, as a yong nouice would talke with a great trauailer, who, carying an Engliſhmans appetite to enquire of news, will be ſure to make what vſe of him he may, and not leaue any thing vnaſkt, that he can reſolue him of. If then the diuell be tedious in diſcourſing, impute it to *Pierce Penileſſe* that was importunate in demanding; or if I haue not made him ſo ſecret or ſubtill in his art, as diuels are wont, let that of *Lactantius* be mine excuſe, *lib* 2, *cap* 16 *de Origenis errore*, when he ſaith, the diuels haue no power to lie to a juſt man, and if they adiure them by the maieſty of the high God, they will not onely confeſſe themſelues to be Diuels, but alſo tel their / names as they are. *Deus bone*, what a vaine am I fallen into? what, an Epiſtle to the Readers in the end of thy book? Out vppon thee for an arrent blocke, where learndſt thou that wit? O ſir, hold your peace: a fellon neuer comes to his anſwere before the offence be committed. Wherefore, if I in the beginning of my Book ſhould haue come off with a long Apologie to excuſe my ſelfe, it were all one, as if a theefe, going to ſteale a horſe, ſhould deuiſe by the waie as he went, what to ſpake when he came at the gallowes. Here is a croſſe waie, and I thinke it good heere to part. Farwell, fare-

well, good Parenthesis, and commend me to Ladie Vanitie, thy mistres.

Now, *Pierce peniles*, if for a parting blow thou hast ere a tricke in thy budget more then ordinarie, bee not daintie of it, for a good patron will pay for all. I, where is he? *Promissis quilibet diues esse potest*. But cap and thanks is all our Courtiers payment: wherefore, I would counsell my frends to be more considerate in their Dedications, and not cast away so many months labour vppon a clowne that knowes not how to vse a Scholer: for what reason haue I to bestow any of my wit vpon him, that wil bestow none of his wealth vpon me. Alas, it is an easie matter for a goodlie tall fellow, that shineth in his silkes, to come and out face a poore simple Pedant in a thred bare cloak, and tell him his Booke is prety, but at this time he is not prouided for him: marrie, about two or three daies hence if he come that waie, his Page shal say he is not within, or els he is so busie with my L. How-call-ye him, and my L. What-call-ye him, that he may not be spoken withall. These are the common courses of the world, which euery man priuatly murmurs at, but none dares openlie vpbraid, because all Artists for the most are base minded and like the *Indians*, that haue store of gold & precious stones at commãd, yet are ignorant of their value, and therfore let the Spaniards, the Englishmen

and euery one lode their ſhips with them without moleſtation. So they, enioyeing and poſſeſſing the puritie of knowledge, (a treaſure farre richer than the Indian Mynes) let euerie proud *Thraſo* be partaker of their perfections, repaieing them no profit: and / gyld himſelfe with the titles they giue him, when he wil ſcarce returne them a good word for their labor: giue an Ape but a nut, and he wil looke your head for it; or a Dog a bone, and hele wag his tayle: but giue me one of my young Maſters a booke, and he will put of his hat and bluſh, and ſo go his waie.

Yes, now I remember me, I lie; for I know him that had thankes for three yeares worke, and a Gentleman that beſtowed much coſt in refining of muſicke, & had ſcarſe Fidlers wages for his labor. We want an *Aretine* here among vs, that might ſtrip theſe golden aſſes out of their gay trappings, and after he had ridden them to death with railing, leaue them on the dunghil for carion. But I will write to his ghoſt by my carrier, & I hope hele repare his whip, and vſe it againſt our Engliſh Peacockes, that painting themſelues with Church ſpoiles, like mightie mens ſepulchers, haue nothing but Atheiſme, ſchiſme, hypocriſie, and vainglorie, like rotten bones lie lurking within them. O how my ſoule abhors theſe buckram giants, that hauing an outward face of honor ſet vpon them by flat-

terers & parafites, haue their inward thoughts ftuft with ftraw and fethers, if they were narrowlie fifted.

Farre be it, bright ftarres of Nobilitie, and gliftring Attendaunts on the true *Diana*, that this my fpeach fhould be anie way iniurious to your glorious magnificence: for in you liue thofe fparkes of *Auguftus* liberalitie, that neuer fent any away emptie: and Science feauenfold throne, welnigh ruined by ryot and auarice, is mightely fupported by your plentifull larges, which makes Poets to fing fuch goodlie Himnes of your praife, as no enuious pofteritie may forget. But from generall fame, let me digres to my priuate experience, and with a tongue vnworthie to name a name of fuch worthiness, affectionately emblazon to the eyes that wonder, the matchles Image of Honor, & magnificent rewarder of vertue, *Ioues eagle-borne Ganimed*, thrice noble *Amintas*. In whofe high fpirit, fuch a Deitie of wifdome appeareth, that if *Homer* were to write his *Odyffea* new, (where, vnder the perfon of *Vlyffes*, hee defcribeth a fingular man of perfection, in whome all ornaments both of peace / and war are affembled in the height of their excelence) he need no other inftance to augment his conceipt, than the rare carriage of his honorable minde. Many writers and good wits, are giuen to commend their patrons and Benefactors, fome for

proweſſe, ſome for policie, others for the glorie of their Anceſtrie and exceeding bountie and liberalitie: but if my vnable pen ſhould euer enterpriſe ſuch a continuate taſke of praiſe, I woulde embowell a number of thoſe windpuft bladders, and disfurniſh their bald pates of the perriwigs Poets haue lent them, that ſo I might reſtore glorie to his right inheritance, and theſe ſtoln Titles to their true owners: which, if it would ſo fall out, (as time maie worke all things) the aſpiring nettles, with their ſhadie topes, ſhal no longer ouer-dreep the beſt hearbs, or keep them from the ſmiling aſpect of the Sunn, that liue & thriue by comfortable beames. None but Deſert ſhould ſit in Fames grace, none but *Hector* be remembred in the chronicles of Proweſſe, none but thou, moſt courteous *Amyntas*, be the ſeconde muſicall argument of the knight of the Red-croſſe.

Oh decus atque ævi gloria ſumma tui.

And heere (heauenly *Spencer*) I am moſt highlie to accuſe thee of forgetfulnes, that in that honourable Catalogue of our Engliſh *heroes*, which inſueth the concluſion of thy famous Fairie Queene, thou wouldſt let ſo ſpeciall a Piller of Nobilitie paſſe vnſaluted. The verie thought of his farre deriued diſcent, and extraordinarie parts, wherewith hee aſtoineth the world, and drawes all hearts to his

loue, woulde haue inſpired thy forewearied Muſe with new furie to proceede to the next triumphs of thy ſtatelie Goddeſſe: but as I, in fauor of ſo rare a ſcholler, ſuppoſe with this counſaile he refraind his mention in this firſt part, that hee might with full ſaile proceede to his due commendations in the ſecond. Of this occaſion long ſince I happened to frame a Sonnet, which, being wholie intended to the reuerence of this renoumed Lord (to whom I owe all the vtmoſte powers of my loue and dutie) I meant heere for variety of ſtile to inſert.

Peru / ſing yeſternight, with idle eyes,
The Fairy Singers ſtately tuned verſe:
And viewing after Chap-mens wonted guiſe,
What ſtrange contents the title did rehearſe.
I ſtreight leapt ouer to the latter end,
Where like the queint Comædians of our time
That when their Play is doone do fall to ryme,
I found ſhort lines, to ſundry Nobles pend.
Whom he as ſpeciall Mirrours ſingled fourth,
To be the Patrons of his Poetry;
I read them all, and reuerenc't their worth,
Yet wondred he left out thy memory.
  But therefore geſt I he ſuppreſt thy name,
  Becauſe few words might not cõpriſe thy fame.

Beare with me gentle Poet, though I conceiue not aright of thy purpoſe, or be too inquiſitiue into

the intent of thy obliuion: for, how euer my coniecture may miſſe the cuſhion, yet ſhall my ſpeech ſauour of friendſhip, though it be not alied to iudgement.

Tantum hoc molior, in this ſhort digreſſion, to acquaint our countrymen, that liue out of the Eccho of the Courte, with a common knowledge of his inualuable vertues, and ſhew my ſelfe thankfull (in ſome part) for benefits receiued: which ſince words may not counteruaile, that are the vſual lip-labour of euerie idle diſcourſer, I conclude with that of *Ouid*:

> *Accipe per longos tibi qui deſeruiat annos,*
> *Accipe qui pura novit amare fide.*

And if my zeale and dutie (though all to meane to pleaſe) may by any induſtry, be reformed to your gratious liking, I ſubmit the ſimplicitie of my endeuours to your ſeruice, which is all my performance may profer, or my ability performe.

> *Præbeat Alcinoi poma benignus ager,*
> *Officium pauper numeret ſtudiumque fidemque.*

And ſo I breake off this endleſſe argument of ſpeeche abruptlie.

FINIS.

APPENDIX NOTE.

Agreeably to promise in Note prefixed to 'Pierce Penileſſe' (page 2), I place here the more noticeable 'faults' of the Jhones edition, as it is represented in the late Mr. J. Payne Collier's reproduction for the 'Shakespeare Society' (1842). It would have been easy to have multiplied these 'faults'—against which Nashe himself wrote vehemently—but those recorded may be accepted as at once fairly representative and showing the advantage of taking for text the Author's own edition of 1592.

Page 9, line 20, 'milder' misprinted 'milde.'
„ 11, „ 20, 'whipt out' misprinted 'whipt.'
„ 19, „ 26, 'thinke you could' (dropped).
„ 26, „ 26, 'Earle' misprinted 'carle.'
„ 27, „ 11, 'Lady Swin-ſnout' misprinted 'Ladie Manibetter.'
„ 28, „ 26, 'a ſcornfull melancholy . . . courſe & . . .' misprinted 'melancholike courſe in his gate and countenance.'
„ 29, „ 17, 'vnthriftes' misprinted 'outhrifts.'
„ 34, „ 3, 'caſe' misprinted 'eaſe.'
„ 34, „ 7, 'finers' misprinted 'finders.'
„ 35, „ 2, 'a paire of ſhoos and a Canuas-dublet' misprinted 'a ſcholler bread and cheeſe.'
„ 35, „ 5, 'obiect' misprinted 'abiect' [but query ?].
„ 35, „ 14, 'Raynard' misprinted 'Raynold.'
„ 38, „ 15, 'then a ſtab' misprinted 'then the ſtab.'
„ 39, „ 17, 'thrumd' misprinted 'thrumb.'
„ 39, „ 22, 'ſtuft' misprinted 'puft.'
„ 45, „ 4, '*Troynouant*' misprinted '*Troynonant.*'
„ 45, „ 12, 'furious' misprinted 'furies.'
„ 45, „ 16, 'furde' misprinted 'furre.'

Page 46, line 27, 'guegawes' misprinted 'jymiams' (and a nonsensical note on it).
,, 50, last line, 'euery' misprinted 'anie.'
,, 57, line 1, 'loſt his maſter' misprinted 'runnes after.'
,, 57, ,, 5, 'vaine' misprinted 'traine.'
,, 57, ,, 7, 'thoſe' misprinted 'them.'
,, 73, ,, 8, 'eater' misprinted 'cater.'
,, 78, ,, 3, 'from Gentlemen' (dropped).
,, 83, ,, 21, 'Proui[de]nce' misprinted 'Prouince' (in both).
,, 87, ,, 11, 'yt' (dropped).
,, 88, ,, 7, 'howſoeuer' misprinted 'howeuer.'
,, 89, ,, 15, 'immortalitie' misprinted 'immoralitie.'
,, 92, ,, 17, 'Players' misprinted 'playes.'
,, 92, ,, 23, 'euer' misprinted 'euen.'
,, 101, ,, 11, 'Pullerie' misprinted 'pulterie.'
,, 105, ,, 3, 'impudencie' misprinted 'impudence.'
,, 118, ,, 21, 'vnreuerently' misprinted 'vnreuently.'
,, 125, ,, 5, 'illuſions' misprinted 'alluſions.'
,, 128, ,, 10, 'Inck-dropper' misprinted 'Jack-dropper.'
,, 128, ,, 11, 'nailes' misprinted 'vailes.'
,, 128, ,, 13, 'diſh-lickers' misprinted 'diſlikers.'
,, 129, ,, 14, 'adiure' misprinted 'abjure.'
,, 129, ,, 21, 'fellon' misprinted 'fellow.'
,, 130, ,, 25, 'ſhineth' misprinted 'ſhines.'
,, 130, ,, 25, 'becauſe all artiſts for the moſt part' misprinted 'becauſe the moſt artiſts.'
,, 131, ,, 26, 'he' (dropped).
,, 132, ,, 16, 'that' misprinted 'of.'

On the other hand, it is due to the Jhones edition to acknowledge several correct readings in single words as against incorrect in our '92 text, *e.g.* 'ſhape' for 'ſhame' (p. 19, l. 24), 'this' for 'thus' (p. 30, l. 17), 'yeomen' for 'yeoman' (p. 45, l. 18), 'iuice' for 'iuſtice' (p. 60, l. 2).

A. B. G.

VII.

HARVEY-GREENE TRACTATES.

I. A Wonderfull Strange and Miraculous Astrologicall Prognostication, etc.

1591-2.

NOTE.

For the 'Wonderfull Strange and Miraculous Aſtrologicall Prognoſtication' I am indebted to the Bodleian. See Memorial-Introduction—Biographical, in Vol. I., and 'Critical' in Vol. IV.—on it, and other related publications.—A. B. G.

A Wonderfull *ſtrange and miraculous, Aſtro-* logicall Prognoſtication for this yeer of our Lord God. 1591.

Diſcouering ſuch wonders to *happen this yeere, as neuer chaunced* ſince Noes floud.

Wherein if there be found one lye, the Author will looſe his credit for euer.

By Adam Fouleweather, Student in Aſſe-tronomy.

Imprinted at London by *Thomas* Scarlet.
(1591.)

¶ To the Readers health.

SItting Gentlemen vpon Douer cliffes, to quaint my ſelfe with the art of Naui-gation, and knowe the courſe of the Tides, as the Danſke Crowes gather on the Sandes againſt a ſtorme: ſo there appeared on the downs ſuch a flock of knaues, that by Aſtrological con-iectures I began to gather, that this yeere would proue intemperate by an extreme heat in Sõmer, inſomuch that the ſtones in Cheap ſide ſhould be ſo hot, that diuers perſons ſhould feare to goe from Poules to the Counter in the Poultrye: whereupon I betook me to my Ephimerides, and erecting a figure, haue found ſuch ſtrange accidents to fall out this yeere, Mercury being Lord and predominate in the houſe of Fortune, that many fooles ſhall haue full cofers, and wiſe men walke vp and downe with empty purſſes: that if Iupiter were not ioyned with him in a fauourable aſpect, the Butchers / of Eaſt-cheape ſhould doo little or nothing all Lent but make prickes: ſeeing

therefore the wonders that are like to fall out this preſent yeere, I haue for the benefit of my Countrymen taken in hand to make this Prognoſtication, diſcourſing breefelye of the Eclipſes both of Sunne and Moone, with their dangerous effectes like to followe, which if God preuent not: many poore men are like to faſt on Sondaies for want of food, and ſuch as haue no ſhooes to goe barefoot, if certaine deuout Coblers proue not the more curteous : but yet Aſtrologie is not ſo certaine, but it may fayle: and therfore diuers Hoſteſſes ſhall chaulke more this yeere then their Gueſts wil wipe out: So that I conclude, whatſoeuer is ſaide by art. *Sapiens dominabitur aſtris.*

Your freend and Student in Aſſe-trologie.

Adam Fouleweather./



Of the Eclipſes that ſhall happen this preſent *yeere, to the great and fear-* full terrifying of the beholders.

IF *we may credit* the authenticall cenſures of Albumazan and Ptolomey, about the motions of celeſtiall bodies, whoſe influence dooth exitat and procure continuall mutability in the lower region: we ſhal finde ÿ the Moon this yeere ſhall be eclipſed, which ſhall happen in one of ÿ 12. moneths, & ſome of the foure / quarters of the yeere, whoſe pointes as they ſhall be totallye darkened, ſo the effectes ſhall be wondrous and ſtrange. For Cancer being the ſole houſe of the Moone, dooth preſage that this yeere fruits ſhall be greatly eaten with Catterpillers: as Brokers, Farmers, and Flatterers,

which feeding on the ſweate of other mens browes, ſhall greatlye hinder the beautye of the ſpring, and diſparage the growth of all hotteſt hearbes, vnleſſe ſome northerly winde of Gods vengãce cleere the trees of ſuch Catterpillers, with a hotte plague and the peſtilence: but Cancer being a watrie ſigne and cheefe gouernour of flouds and ſtreams, it foreſheweth that Fiſhmongers if they be not well lookt to, ſhall goe downe as farre as Graues end in Wherries and foreſtall the market, to the great preiudice of the poore, that all Lent ground their fare on the benefit of Salte fiſhe and red herring: beſides it ſignifieth that Brewers ſhal make hauocke of Theames water, and put more liquour then they were accuſtomed amongſt their Maulte: to the ouerthrowe of certain craſed Ale knights, whoſe morning draughtes of ſtrong Beere is a great ſtaye to their ſtomacks: a lamentable caſe if it be not lookt into and preuented by ſome ſpeedye ſupplication to the woorſhipfull order of ale cunners. / But in this we haue great hope that becauſe the effects cannot ſurpriſe the cauſe, diuers Tapſters ſhall truſt out more then they can get in: and although they fill their Pots but halfe full, yet for want of true dealing die in the Brewers debt.

Thus much for the watry ſigne of Cancer, and becauſe this Eclipſe is little viſible in our horiſon,

I paſſe it ouer with this prouiſo to all ſeafaring men, to cary more ſhirts then one with them a ſhip boord, leſt to their great labor they ſpend many houres in murthering their vermin on the hatches.

The Eclipſe of the Sunne.

THe Eclipſe of the Sun according to Proclus opinion is like to produce many hot and peſtilent infirmities, eſpeciallie amongſt Sumners and Pettifoggers, whoſe faces being combuſt with many fiery inflamatiues ſhall ſhew ẏͤ dearth, that by their deuout drinking is like to enſue of Barly, if violent death take not away ſuch cōſuming mault worms: diuers are like to be troubled with ſuch hotte rewmes in their heads, that their haire ſhall fall off: and ſuch hot agues ſhall raigne this yeere, with ſtrange feuers and calamaties, that / if the Sunne were not placed in a colde ſigne, Reniſh wine would riſe to ten pence a quarte before the latter end of Auguſt: but diuers good Planets being retrog[r]ade, foretelleth that Lemmans this yeere ſhalbe plenty, inſomuch that many ſhall vſe them to bedward, for the quallifying of their hot and inflamed ſtomackes. And Mars being placed neere vnto the Sunne ſheweth that there ſhalbe a great death among people: olde women that can

liue no longer ſhall dye for age: and yong men that haue Vſurers to their father, ſhal this yeer haue great cauſe to laugh, for the Deuill hath made a decree, that after they are once in hell, they ſhall neuer riſe againe to trouble their executors: Beſide that by all coniecturall argumentes the influence of Mars ſhall be ſo violent, that diuers ſouldiers in partes beyond the ſeas, ſhall fall out for want of their paye, and heere in our meridionall clyme, great quarrelles ſhall be raiſed between man and man, eſpecially in caſes of Law: gentry ſhall goe checkmate with Iuſtice, and coyne out countenance ofttimes equitie: the poore ſitting on pennyleſſe benche, ſhall ſell their Coates to ſtriue for a ſtrawe, and Lawyers laugh ſuch fooles to ſcorne as cannot keep their crownes in their purſſes.

Further, there is like to be great falling out amongſt/Church men and certaine fond ſects of religion like to trouble the commons: ſelfe conceipters and ouer holy counterfeites that delight in ſingularitie, ſhall riſe vp and deſpiſe authoritie, preſuming euen to abuſe the higher powers, if Saturne with a frowning influence, did not threaten them with Tibornes conſequence. But whereas the Sun is darkned but by digits, and that vpon ỹ ſouth points, it preſageth great miſeries to Spain and thoſe Southerly Countries: Friers and Monks

ſhal heat them ſo this yeer with confeſſing of Harlots, that their crownes ſhall wax balde of the one accord, to the great impoueriſhing of the Spaniſh Barbers: Surgeons in Spain ſhall wax rich, and their Hoſpitals poore: ſuch a peſtilent mortallitie is like to fall amongſt thoſe hipocriticall maſſemongers. The Dukes, Marqueſſes & Counties ſhall haue their dublets cloſed with ſuch Spaniſh buttons, that they ſhal neuer proue good quireſters, for the hotte and inflamed rewmes fallen down into their throats: It is further to be feared, that becauſe the Eclipſe hapneth in Iulye, there will through the extrem heat grow ſuch abundãce of Fleas, that women ſhall not goe to bed before twelue a clocke at night, for the great murthers and ſtratagems they are like to commit vpon thoſe little animalls.

And whereas this Eclipſe falleth out at three of the clocke in the afternoone, it foreſheweth that manye ſhall goe ſoberer into Tauernes then they ſhall come out: and that he which drinkes hard and lyes cold, ſhal neuer dye of the ſweate, although Gemini combuſt and retrog[r]ade, ſheweth that ſome ſhall haue ſo ſore a ſweating, that they may ſell their haire by the pound to ſtuffe Tennice balles: but if the Beadelles of Bridewell be carefull this Summer, it may be hoped that Peticote lane may be leſſe peſtered with ill aires then it was woont:

and the houſes there ſo cleere clenſed, that honeſt women may dwell there without any dread of the whip and the carte: and I finde that the altitude of that place and of Shordich are all one eleuated, and 2 degrees, and vnder the zenith or verticall point of Venus, which preſageth that ſundry ſorts of men and women ſhall be there reſident: ſome ſhalbe ſo ſhort heeld & ſo queſie ſtomackt that they ſhal ly in their beds while noon, by which means they ſhal grow ſo ful of groſſe humors, that they ſhalbe troubled with ſtrange timpanies & ſwellings in their bellies, vncurable for fortye weekes vntill they be helped by the aduice of ſome ſkilfull Midwiſe.

Beſides, other of the ſame ſex and faction, / ſhall learn to coſin young nouices, and fetch in young Gentlemen, to the great ouerthrow of youth, if ſome ſharpe and ſpeedye redreſſe be not fetcht from the woorſhipfull Colledge of the Phiſitians in the parriſh of S. Brides. But heere by the waye gentle Reader, note that this Eclipſe ſheweth, that this yeer ſhall be ſome ſtrange birthes of Children produced in ſome monſtrous forme, to the greefe of the Parentes, and fearefull ſpectackle of the beholders: but becauſe the Eclipſe chaunſeth Southerlye, it is little to be feared that the effectes ſhall fail in England: yet ſomewhat it is to bee doubted, that diuers Children ſhall be borne, that

when they come to age ſhall not knowe their owne Fathers: others ſhall haue their fingers of [t]he nature of Lyme twigges, to get moſt parte of their liuing with fiue and a reache: ſome ſhall be born with feet like vnto Hares, that they ſhal run ſo ſwift, that they ſhall neuer tarry with maiſter, but trudge from poſte to piller, till they take vp beggars buſh for their lodging: Others ſhall haue Noſes like Swine, that there ſhall not be a feaſt within a myle, but they ſhall ſmell it out: But eſpeciallye it is to be doubted, that diuers women this yeere ſhall bee borne with two tungs, to the terrible greefe of ſuch as ſhall marry them, vttering / in their furye ſuch rough caſt eloquence, that knaue and ſlaue ſhalbe but holyday woords to their huſbands. And whereas this fearefull Eclipſe dooth continue but an houre and a halfe, it ſignifieth that this yeere womens loue to their huſbands ſhall be very ſhorte, ſome ſo momentarye, that it ſhall ſcarſe continue from the Church doore to the wedding houſe: and that Hennes, Capons, Geeſe, and other pullin ſhall little haunt poore mens tables, but flye awaye with ſpittes in their bellies to fatte Churlles houſes, that pamper themſelues vp with delicates and dainties: although very fewe other effectes are to be prognoſticated, yet let me giue this caueat to my Countrymen, as a clauſe to this wonderfull Eclipſe. Let ſuch as

haue clothes enow, keep themſelues warme from taking of colde: and I would wiſhe rich men all this winter to ſit by a good fire, and hardlye to goe to bed without a Cuppe of Sack, and that ſo qualified with Suger, that they proue not rewmatick: let them feede daintilye and take eaſe enough, and no doubt according to the iudgement of Albumazar, they are like to liue as long as they can, and not to dye one hower before their time.

Thus much for this ſtrange Eclipſe of the Sunne.

¶ *Of / the ſecond Eclipſe of the Moone, which is like to fall out when it chaunſeth either before the* 31. *of December or els not at all, this preſent yeere.*

1591.

THe ſecond Eclipſe of the Moon ſhalbe but little ſeene in England, wherevpon the effectes ſhall be nothing preiuditiall to our clyme: yet as the bodye of the Moone is neuer obſcure in part or in whole, but ſome dangerous euents doo followe: ſo I meane to ſet downe breefely what is to be lookte for in theſe weſterne partes of the worlde.

Firſt therefore it is to bee feared, that the Danes ſhall this yeere bee greatly giuen to drincke, inſomuch that Engliſh Beere ſhall there be woorth fiue pence a ſtoape, that their Hoffes and tappe houſes ſhall be more frequented, then the Pariſhe Churches, and many ſhall haue more Spruce Beere in their bellies, then wit in their

heads: wherevpon ſhall / growe Apoplexies and colde palſies in their legges, that they ſhall diuers times not bee able to ſtand on their feete. Vpon this ſhall growe great commoditye to the Potters and Glaſſe makers, for it is like there ſhall be a great ouerthrowe of them, if there bee not ſome act made for drinking in blacke Jackes. But if the weather prooue ſeaſonable, and the Harueſt great, and the Barnes full of Corne: Rye is like to be cheap in Denmarke, and bread to be of a reaſonable ſize, for the releeuing of the poore. Mary, Fraunce is like to haue a great dearth of honeſt men, if the king preuaile not againſt theſe mutenous Rebelles of the League, and Papiſts in diuers places to be plentye, if God or the King rout them not out with a ſharpe ouer-throw: But this hope we haue againſt that raſcall rabble of thoſe ſhauelings, that there was found in an olde booke this Prophecie ſpoken about Jeruſalem long ſince by a Jew: The tree that God hath not planted ſhall be pulled vp by the roots: ſome curious Aſtronomers of late dayes that are more Propheticall then Juditiall, affirme that Martin the kill-hog for his deuout drincking (by the Pope canonized a Saint) ſhall riſe againe in the apparell of a Miniſter, and tickle ſome of the baſer ſorte with ſuch luſty humors in their braines, that / diuers ſelfe con-

ceited fooles ſhal become his diſciples, and grounding their witleſſe opinion on an heriticall foundation, ſhall ſeeke to ruinate authoritie, and peruert all good orders eſtabliſhed in the Church, to the great preiudice of vnity and religion, tituling thẽſelues by the names of Martiniſtes, as the Donatiſts grew from Donates: were it not that the Moone being in Taurus, which gouernes the neck and throat, ſhewes that the Squinancie ſhall raigne amongſt them, and diuers for want of breath dye of the ſtrangling. Now for that Capricornus is a ſigne wherein Luna is often reſident, it prognoſticateth a great death amongſt hornde beaſts. The Butchers ſhall commit wilfull murther vpon Sheepe and Oxen, and diuers Keepers kill ſtore of Buckes, and reſerue no other fees to their ſelues but the hornes, inſo-muche that if the Perſon of Horne-Church in Eſſex take not heede, there maye hap to prooue this yeere ſome Cuckoldes in his Parriſh.

But there is like to bee concluded by an act ſet downe in Graues ende Barge, that hee that wypes his Noſe and hath it not, ſhall forfeite his whole face, and that all ſuch as are iealous ouer their wiues without cauſe, are worthie to bee puniſht with / the horne plague for their labour. And whereas this Eclipſe is farre from the ſigne Piſces, it ſhewes that there ſhall bee

much ſtinking fiſh this yere at Billings gate, and that Quinborowe oyſter boates ſhall ofte times carrie knaues as wel as honeſt men: but let the Fiſh-wiues take heed, for if moſt of them proue not ſcoldes, yet becauſe Piſces is a ſigne that gouernes the feete, they ſhall weare out more ſhooes in Lent then in anie two months beſide through the whole yeere, and get their liuing by walking and crying, becauſe they ſlaundered Ram alley with ſuch a tragical infamie. The reſt I conceale as friuolous, and little neceſſarie to be touched in this Prognoſtication.

A declaration of the generall diſpoſition of ſundrie conceited qualities incident vnto mens mindes & natures throughout theſe foure quarters of the yere, by the merrie influence of the Planets, with ſome other tragicall euents and obſeruations worthie the noting, contayned vnder each ſeperated reuolution.

And firſt of the inclination of the Winter quarter.

Winter / the firſt Aſtronomicall quarter of the yeare, according to my vſuall account, whatſoever Ptolomie ſays, beginneth ſooner with poore men than with rich, graunted ſo by the malignant influence of Saturne, whoſe conſtellation is that ſuche as haue no money nor credit, ſhall want

coles & woode, and be faine to ſtand and ſtarue for colde, while olde pennifathers ſit and waſt them ſelues by the fire. The winter beginning at that inſtant, when the Sunne makes his entraunce into the firſt degree of Capricornus, that Hiemall ſolſtitiall ſigne ſhewes that by naturall inclination this quarter is generally fleugmatike, and that all ſhall be of ſuche great authoritie, that the Bakers Baſket ſhall giue the wall vnto the Brewers Barrell, and a halfe pennye drie doe homage vnto a halfe pennye wet. The weather and ſeaſon being ſo colde that diuerſe for feare of the froſt ſhall ſit all daye at Tables and Cardes, while their poore wiues and families faſt at home for their follies. And in reſpect that I finde three of the ſeauen Planetes to be in waterie ſignes as Juppiter, Mars, and the Moone, it ſignifieth that diuerſe perſons both men and women for want of wine or ſtrong drinke ſhall goe to bedde ſober againſt their willes. That Sea-faring men ſhall haue ill lucke if / either their ſhippes hit agaynſt rockes or ſticke in the ſandes, that there ſhall bee ſuch great hoarie froſtes, that men and women ſhall creepe to bedde together, and ſome of them lie ſo long till they bee fetchte out with a Baſon. Heere Saturne retrograde in Gemini, ſhewes that there ſhall this Winter fall ſuch great fogs and miſts, that diuerſe riche men ſhall looſe their

purſes by the high waie ſide, and poore men be ſo weather beaten by the crafte of vſurers, that they ſhall begge their bread by the extremitie of ſuch extortion: but Mercurie and Venus beeing congregated in Sagitarie, prognoſticateth that for want of faire weather, ſuch as haue but one ſhirt ſhall go woolward till that be a waſhing, and that water-men that want fares ſhall ſit and blowe their fingers till theyr fellowes row betwixte the old Swanne and Weſtminſter. And by reaſon that Mars that malignant Planet, hath nothing to doe in that Hiemall reuolution, ſouldiers this Winter for the moſt parte, ſhall lie ſtill in garriſons, and ſhall not be troubled with more monie than is neceſſarie. Beeing alſo greatly to bee feared, that through the extreame colde diuerſe poore men ſhall die at riche mennes doores: pittie ſhall bee exiled, good woorkes truſt ouer the ſea with Jacke / a lent and Hoſpitalitie baniſht as a ſigne of popiſh religion: and were it not that ſome moiſt ſhoures ſhal moderate the hardnes of the froſt, Charitie ſhould for want of houſe roome lie and freeze to death in the ſtreets: diuerſe great ſtormes are this yere to be feared, eſpecially in houſes where the wiues weare the breeches, with ſuch lowde windes, that the women ſhall ſcolde their huſbandes quight out of doores, wherevpon is like to fall great haileſtones as bigge as ioynd ſtooles, that ſome ſhall

haue their heads broken: and all through the froward difpofition of Venus. But Mars comes in and playes the man, who beeing placed in Gemini, that gouerns armes and fhoulders, prefageth that fundrie tall fellowes fhall take heart at graffe, who armed with good cudgels, fhall fo lambeake thefe ftubborne hufwiues, that the wind fhall turne into another quarter, and fo the weather waxe more calme and quiet. Such greate floudes are like to infue, through this Hiemall diftemperature, that diuerfe men fhall be drowned on drie hilles, and fifhe if they could not fwimme, were vtterly like to perifh. Eeles are like to bee deere if there bee few or none taken, and plentie of poutes to bee had in all places, efpeciallie in thofe coaftes and Countries where weomen haue / not their owne willes. Nowe Gentle Reader in refpect of diuerfe particular circumftances, drawne from the daily motions, progreffions, ftations, retrogradations, afpects, and other appointmentes of fixed and wandring ftars, I am induced to fet downe that fuch as haue no fire, fhall feele moft cold, and that wierdrawers, if they plye not their worke, fhall feele no great heate, that they in Ruffia fhall fuffer more preiudice by the fharpeneffe of Winter than the Spaniards: and yet one thing is to bee hoped for at the handes fo Mercurie, that this winter mony fhall haue

a fall, for Philip and Mary ſhillings that hereto-fore went for 12.*d.* ſhall now paſſe from man to man for 6.*d.* a peece.

The diſtemperance of this quarter, is like to breede many ſickeneſſes and ſundrie diſeaſes as well in young as in old, proceeding either of corrupt and vicious bloud or of ſuperabundance of crude and raw fleugmatike humors. As Cephalagies or paines in the head, which ſhall make men dizzy that ſome ſhal ſtagger & ſtumble vp & downe the ſtreetes till they haue ſtolne a nappe to quiet their braines. Ach in the ſhoulders ſhal raine amongeſt diuerſe women that haue ſhrewes to their huſbands, and diuerſe drunken men ſhall be peſtured with ſurfets. Maidens this winter ſhall haue ſtrange ſtitches & gripings / of the collicke, which diſeaſes proceed by too much lying vpright: and men ſhall be troubled with ſuch paine in the eies, that they ſhall not know their owne wiues from other women, with coughs, rumes, and itchings, which I omit.

Of the Spring time.

Winter being finiſhed with the laſt grade of the watry ſigne Piſces, at the Suns ioyful progreſſe into the firſt degree of Aries. The ſecond quarter of our vſuall yere commonly called the ſpring cõmeth next, which beginneth when graſſe begins

to ſproute, & trees to bud. But to treat of this preſent ſeaſon, foraſmuch as I find the planets to be contradictorily diſpoſed, in ſigns & manſiōs of diuerſe & repugnant qualities, I gather that this ſpring will be very il for ſchollers, for they ſhal ſtudie much and gain litle, they ſhall haue more wit in their heads then money in their purſes, dunces ſhal proue more welthie then diuers doctors, inſomuch that ſundrie vnlettered fooles ſhould creep into the miniſterie, if the prouident care of good Biſhops did not preuent thē. And by the opinion of Proclus, women are like to grow wilful, & ſo variable, that they ſhall laugh & weepe, and all with a winde: Butchers ſhal ſell / their meate as deare as they can, and if they be not carefull, horne beaſtes ſhall bee hurtfull vnto them, and ſome ſhall bee ſo wedded to ſwines fleſh, that they ſhal neuer be without a ſowe in their houſe as long as they liue. This ſpring, or vernall reſolution being naturally hot and moiſt, is like to be verie forwarde for ſprouting fieldes and blooming trees, and becauſe Saturne is in his proper manſion, olde men are like to bee froward, and craftie knaues ſhall neede no Brokers, vſurie ſhalbe called good huſbandrie, and men ſhalbe counted honeſt by their wealth, not by their vertues. And becauſe Aquarius has ſomthing to do ẇ this quarter, it

is to be doubted that diuers ſprings of water will riſe vp in vintners ſellers, to the great weakning of their Gaſcon wine, & the vtter ruine of the ancient order of the redde noſes. March Beere ſhalbe more eſteemed than ſmall Ale.

Out of the old ſtocke of hereſie, this ſpring it is to be feared, will bloome new ſciſmaticall opinions and ſtrange ſects, as Browniſts, Barowiſts, & ſuch balductum deuiſes, to the great hinderance of the vnitie of the Church, & confuſion of the true faith, if the learned doctor ſir T. Tiburne be not taſkte to confute ſuch vpſtart companions, with his plain & dunſtable philoſophie. Cancer is bu / ſie in this ſpringtide, and therefore it is like that floriſhing bloomes of yong gentlemens youth, ſhalbe greatly anoide with caterpillers, who ſhall intangle them in ſuch ſtatutes & recognances, that they ſhall crie out againſt brokers, as Jeremy did againſt falſe prophets. Beſides, thogh this laſt winter nipt vp diuers maſterles men & cut purſes, yet this ſpring is like to afford one euery tearme this ten yere in Weſtminſter hall: Barbers if they haue no worke are like to grow poore, and for that Mercury is cõbuſt and many quarelles like to growe amongſt men, lawiers ſhall proue rich & weare ſide gowns and large conſciences, hauing theyr mouths open to call for fees, and theyr purſes ſhut when they ſhoulde beſtowe almes.

But take heed O you generation of wicked Oſtlers, that ſteale haie in the night from gentlemens horſes, and rub their teth with tallow, that they may eate little when they ſtand at liuery, this I prognoſticate againſt you, that this ſpring, which ſo euer of you dies, ſhall leaue a knaues carcaſſe in the graue behind him, and that they which liue ſhall hop a harlot in his clothes all the yere after. But aboue all let me not hide this ſecret from my countrymen, that Jupiter being in aſpect with Luna, diſcouereth that diuers men ſhal drinke more thē they bleed, & / Tailers ſhall ſteale nothing but what is brought vnto them, that poulters ſhall bee peſtered with rotten egs, & Butchers dogs make libels againſt Lent, that affoordes no foode but herring cobs for their diet.

Diſeaſes incident to this quarter, as by Aſtrologicall & philoſophicall coniectures I can gather, are theſe following: Prentiſes that haue ben ſore beaten, ſhall be troubled with ach in their armes, and it ſhall be ill for ſuch as haue ſore eies, to looke againſt the Sun. The plague ſhall raigne mortally amongſt poore men, that diuerſe of them ſhal not be able to change a man a groate. Olde women that haue taken great colde, may perhaps be trobled with the cough, and ſuch as haue paine in their teeth, ſhall bee

grieuouslie troubled with the tooth ach. Beside, sicke folke shall haue worse stomackes then they which be whole, and men that cannot sleepe, shall take verie little rest: with other accidentall infirmities, which I doe ouerpasse.

A declaration of the disposition and inclination of the Summer quarter.

When the Sunne hath made his course through the vernal signs, Aries, Taurus & Gemini at his passage vnto the solsticiall estiuall signe Cancer. The third parte of an English yeere called Summer, taketh his beginning this yere: as Ptolomie sayth, the twelfth of Iune, but as my skill doth coniecture, it beginneth when the wether waxeth so hot, that beggers scorne barnes and lie in the field for heate and the wormes of Saint Pancredge Church build their bowers vnder the shadow of Colman hedge. The predominant qualities of this quarter is heate and drynesse, whereby I doe gather, that through the influence of Cancer, bottle Ale shall be in great authoritie, and wheat shall doe knightes seruice vnto malte. Tapsters this quarter shall be in greater credite than Coblers, and many shall drinke more then they can yearne. And yet because Mercurie is a signe that is nowe predominant, women shall be more troubled with fleas then men, and such as want

meate ſhall goe ſupperleſſe to bedde. Beſides, this quarter great hurlie burlies are like to bee feared, and greate ſtratagems like to bee performed, thorough the oppoſition of Mars and Saturne: for Butchers are like to make great hauocke amongeſt flies, and beggers on Sunne ſhine dayes to commit great murthers vpon their rebellious vermine, and the knights of Copperſmiths hap to / doo great deedes of armes vpon Cuppes, Cannes, pots, glaſſes, and black iacks: not ceaſing the ſkirmiſh til they are able to ſtand on their legges.

Further it is to bee doubted, that becauſe Venus is in the houſe of Loue, that Millers, Weauers, and Taylors ſhall be counted as theeuiſhe as they are knauiſhe: and Maides this quarter ſhall make ſillyebubbes for their Louers, till ſome of them Calue with the Cowe for companye. But Iupiter in his exaltation preſageth, that diuers young Gentlemen ſhall creepe further into the Mercers Booke in a Moneth, then they can get out in a yere: and that ſundry fellowes in their ſilkes ſhall be appointed to keep Duke Humfrye company in Poules, becauſe they know not wher to get their dinner abroad: if there be great plenty of Cherries this Summer, they are like to come to a penny the pound, and Coſtardmongers this Summer ſhall be licenſt by the Wardens of their hall, to weare and

carry baſkets of Apples on their heads to keepe them from the heat of the Sun. But Libra aduſt and retrograde, foretelleth that there is like to be a league between diuers bakers & the pillorye, for making their bread ſo light, and the Sun ſhall be ſo hotte, that it ſhall melt awaye the conſciences of diuers couetous men, and that / by the meanes of Venus which is in the houſe of Scorpion, women ſhall bee ſo loue ſicke, that Sumners and ciuil lawiers ſhall haue great fees thorough the aboundance of ſuch ſinfull clients, and diuerſe ſpirites in white ſheetes ſhall ſtand in Poules and other Churches, to make their confeſſions. But this by the waie learne of me, ſhomakers ſhall proue ſo proud, that they ſhall refuſe the name of ſouters, and the Tailer and the louſe are like to fall at martiall variance, were it not the worſhipfull company of the Botchers haue ſet downe this order, that he that lies in his bed while his clothes be mending, neede not haue a man to keepe his wardroppe. But amongſt all, the Smithes haue put vp a ſupplication to the Alecunners, that he which goes dronke to bed, and as ſoone as hee wakes dares not carouſe a hartie draught the next morning, ſhall drinke two daies together ſmall Ale for his penance.

This variable ſeaſon is like to bring variable accidents, for diuerſe diſeaſes which will much

molest the people, namely the plurisies which shall grieue many, that they shall haue farre more knauerie than they haue honestie, diuerse fluxes, and especiallie in poore mens purses, for they shall bee so laxatiue, that money shall runne out faster then / they can get it. The small pockes among children and great amongst men, infirmities in the tong, some shall doe nothing but lie with others, which I let pas.

A declaration of the inclination and disposition of the Autumnall or haruest quarter.

Haruest and the last quarter of this yeere beginneth, as I coniecture, when corne is ripe. But for the nature of this autumnall reuolution, because it beginneth in Libra I gather there shall be more holes open this quarter then in all the yeere beside, and strange euents shall chance, for knaues shall weare smockes, and women shall haue holes in their heartes, that as fast as loue creepes in at one, it shall runne out at another. Yet Leo being a firie signe, foresheweth that diuerse men shall haue their teeth longer then their beards, and some shal be so Sun burnt with sitting in the Alehouse, that their noses shall bee able to light a candle. Others shall for want of money paune their clokes, and march mannerly in theyr

doublet and their hoſe. And ſome ſhall this yere haue barnes and yet want corn to put in them. Rie this yeere ſhall bee common in / England, and knaues ſhall be licenſt to ſel it by the pound, and he that wil not this quarter ſpend a pennie with his friende, by the counſayle of Albumazar, ſhall bee thruſt quite out of all good companie for his labour.

It may be doubted that ſome ſtraunge ſickneſſe and vnknowen diſeaſes wil happen, as hollowneſſe of the heart, that a man ſhall not know a knaue from an honeſt man, and vncouth conſumptions of the lyuer, that diuerſe men of good wealth ſhall by their kinde hearts ſpend all and die banquerouts: ſome ſhal be troubled with diſeaſes in the throate, which cannot bee helpte without Bull the hang man plaie the ſkilfull Chyrurgion. Amongeſt the reſt, many that haue faire wiues ſhalbe troubled with greate ſwelling in the browes, a diſeaſe as incurable as the goute. Some ſhall bee troubled with the ſtone, and ſeeke to cunning women to cure them of that diſeaſe, an infirmitie eaſilie amended, and the doctors of Bridewell did not puniſh ſuch women Phiſitians by a Statute. But the greateſt diſeaſe that is to bee feared, is the Cataphaluſie, that is to ſaie, good fellowes this yeere for want of money ſhall oft times be contented to part companie.

And / thus (gentle reader) thou haſt my prognoſtication, gathered by arte, and confirmed by experience, and therefore take it in good worth, for *Quod gratis grate*, and ſo farewell.

FINIS.

VIII.

HARVEY-GREENE TRACTATES.

II. STRANGE NEWES, ETC.

1593.

NOTE.

Mr. J. Payne Collier's reprint of "Strange Newes" (1592-3) swarms with errors. His Copyist must have served him unusually badly. Our exemplar is from the Huth Library: 45 leaves unpaged, A 2—M 2.—G.

Strange Newes,

Of the intercept-

ing certaine Letters, and a Con-

uoy of Verſes, as they were going *Priuilie* to victuall the Low Countries.

Vnaa impellitur vnda.

By *Tho. Naſhe*, Gentleman.

NUNQUAM AUT NUNC.

Printed at London by *Iohn Danter*, dwelling in
Hoſier-Lane neere Holburne
Conduit, 1593.

To the most copious Carminist of our time, and famous persecutor of *Priscian* his verie friend Maister *Apis lapis: Tho. Nash* wisheth new strings to his old tawnie Purse, and all honourable increase of acquaintance in the Cellar.

GENTLE M. William, *that learned writer* Rhenish wine & Sugar, *in the first booke of his Comment vpon* Red-noses, *hath this saying:* veterem ferendo iniuriam inuitas nouam, *which is as much in English, as one Cuppe of nipitaty puls on another. In moyst consideration whereof, as also in zealous regard of that* high *countenance you shew vnto Schollers, I am bolde, in steade of new wine, to carowse to you a cuppe of newes: which if your worship (according to your wonted* Chaucerisme) *shall accept in good part, Ile be your daily Orator to pray, that that pure sanguine complexion of yours may neuer be famisht with potte-lucke, that you may tast till your last gaspe, and liue to see the confusion*

of both your ſpeciall enemies, Small Beere and Grammer rules.

It is not vnknowne to report, what a famous potlepot Patron you haue beene to olde Poets in your daies, & how many pounds you haue ſpent (and, as it were, throwne into the fire) vpon the durt of wiſedome called Alcumie: *Yea, / you are ſuch an infinite* Mecænas *to learned men, that there is not that morſell of meat they can carue you, but you will eate for their ſakes, and accept very thankefully. Thinke not, though vnder correction of your boone-companionſhip, I am diſpoſd to be a little pleaſant, I condemne you of anie immoderation either in eating or drinking, for I know your gouernement and carriage to bee euery way Canonicall. Verilie, verilie, all poore Schollers acknowledge you as their patron, prouiditore, and ſupporter, for there cannot a threedbare Cloake ſooner peepe forth, but you ſtrait preſſe it to bee an outbrother of your bountie: three decaied Students you kept attending vpon you a long time.*

Shall I preſume to dilate of the grauitie of your round cap, and your dudgion dagger? It is thought they wil make you be cald vpon ſhortly to bee Alderman of the Stilliard. And thats well remembred: I heard ſaie, when this laſt Terme was remoued to Hartford, *you fell into a greate ſtudie and care by your ſelfe, to what place the Stilliard ſhould be remooued. I promiſe you truelie it was a deepe medi-*

tation, & ſuch as might well haue beſeemed Eldertons *parliament of noſes to haue ſit vpon.*

A tauerne in London, onelie vpon the motion, mourned al in blacke, and forbare to girt hir temples with iuie, becauſe the grandame of good fellowſhip was like to depart from among them. And I wonder verie much, that you ſampſownd *not your ſelfe into a conſumption with the profound cogitation of it.*

Diu viuas in amore iocisque, *whatſoeuer you do, beware of keeping diet. Sloth is a ſinne, and one ſinne (as one poiſon) muſt be expelled with another. What can he doe better that hath nothing to do, than fal a drinking to keep him / from idleneſſe?*

Fah, me thinks my ieaſts begin alreadie to ſmell of the caſke, with talking ſo much of this liquid prouinder.

In earneſt thus; There is a Doctor and his Fart *that haue kept a foule ſtinking ſtirre in Paules Churchyard; I crie him mercie, I ſlaundred him, he is ſcarſe a Doctor till he hath done his Acts: this dodipoule, this didopper, this profeſſed poetical braggart hath raild vpon me, without wit or art, in certaine foure penniworth of Letters and three farthing-worth of Sonnets; nor do I meane to preſent him and* Shakerley *to the Queens foole-taker for coatch-horſes: for two that draw more equallie in one Oratoriall yoke of vaine-glorie, there is not vnder heauen.*

What saie you, Maister Apis lapis, *will you with your eloquence and credit shield me from carpers? Haue you anie odde shreds of Latine to make this letter-munger a cockscombe of?*

It stands you in hande to arme your selfe against him; for he speaks against Connicatchers, and you are a Connicatcher, as Connicatching is diuided into three parts, the Verser, *the* Setter, *and the* Barnacle.

A Setter *I am sure you are not; for you are no Musitian: nor a* Barnacle; *for you neuer were of the order of the Barnardines: but the* Verser *I cannot acquite you of, for* M. Vaux of Lambeth *brings in sore euidence of a breakefast you wonne of him one morning at an vnlawful game cald riming. What lies not in you to amend, plaie the* Doctor *and defend.*

A fellow that I am to talke with by and by, being told that his Father was a Rope-maker, excused the matter after this sort; And hath neuer saint had reprobate to his Father? *They are his owne wordes, hee cannot goe from / them. You see heere hee makes a* Reprobate *and a* Ropemaker voces conuertibiles. *Go too, take example by him to wash out durt with inke, and run vp to the knees in the channell, if you bee once wetshod. You are amongst graue Doctors, and men of iudgement in both Lawes euery daie: I pray, aske them the question in my absence, whether*

ſuch a man as I haue deſcrib'd this Epiſtler *to be, one that hath a good handſome pickerdeuant, and a prettie leg to ſtudie the Ciuill Law with, that hath made many proper rimes of the olde cut in his daies, and deſerued infinitely of the ſtate by extolling himſelfe and his two brothers in euerie booke he writes: whether (I ſaie) ſuch a famous piller of the Preſſe, now in the fourteenth or fifteenth yeare of the raigne of his Rhetorike, giuing mony to haue this his illiterat Pamphlet of Letters printed (whereas others haue monie giuen them to ſuffer themſelues to come in Print) it is not to bee counted as flat ſimonie, and be liable to one and the ſame penaltie?*

I tell you, I meane to trounce him after twentie in the hundred, and haue a bout with him with two ſtaues and a pike for this geare.

If he get any thing by the bargaine, lette whatſoeuer I write hence-forward bee condemned to wrappe bumbaſt in.

Carouſe to me good lucke, for I am reſolutely bent; the beſt bloud of the brothers ſhall pledge me in vineger. O would thou hadſt a quaffing boule, which, like Gawens *ſcull, ſhould containe a pecke, that thou mightſt ſwappe off a hartie draught to the ſucceſſe of this voiage.*

By whatſoeuer thy viſage holdeth moſt pretious I beſeech thee, by Iohn Dauies *ſoule, and the blew Bore in the Spittle, I coniure thee, to draw out thy purſe,*

and giue me nothing / for the dedication of my Pamphlet.

Thou art a good fellow I know, and hadst rather spend ieasts than monie. Let it be the taske of thy best tearmes, to safeconduct this booke through the enemies countrey.

Proceede to cherish thy surpassing carminicall arte of memorie with full cuppes (as thou dost): let Chaucer *bee new scourd against the day of battaile, and* Terence *come but in nowe and then with the snuffe of a sentence, and* Dictum puta, *Weele strike it as dead as a doore naile;* Haud teruntii estimo. *We haue cattes meate and dogges meate inough for these mungrels. Howeuer I write merrilie, I loue and admire thy pleasant wittie humor, which no care or crosse can make vnconuersable. Stil bee constant to thy content, loue poetry, hate pedantisme.* Vade, vale, caue ne titubes, mandataq; frangas.

Thine intirely,

Tho. Nashe. /

To the Gentlemen *Readers*.

GENTLEMEN, the ſtrong fayth you haue conceiu'd, that I would do workes of ſupererrogation in anſwering the Doctor, hath made mee to breake my daye with other important buſines I had, and ſtand darting of quils a while like the Porpentine.

I know there want not welwillers to my disgrace, who ſay my onely Muſe is contention; and other, that with *Tiberius Cæſar* pretending to ſee in the darke, talke of ſtrange obiectes by them diſcouered in the night, when in truth they are nothing elſe but the glimmering of their eies.

I will not holde the candle to the Deuill, vnmaſke my holiday Muſe to enuie; but if any ſuch deepe inſighted detracter will challenge mee to whatſoeuer quiet aduenture of Art, wherein he thinkes mee leaſt conuerſant, hee ſhall finde that I am *Tam Mercurio quàm Marti*, a Scholler in ſome thing elſe but contention.

If idle wittes will needes tye knottes on ſmooth bulruſhes with their tongues, faith, the worlde

might thinke I had little to attend, if I ſhould goe about to vnlooſe them with my penne.

I / cannot tell how it comes to paſſe, but in theſe ill eide daies of ours, euery man delights with *Ixion* to beget children of clouds, digge for Pearles in dunghils, and wreſt oyle out of iron.

Poore *Pierce Pennileſſe* haue they turnd to a coniuring booke, for there is not that line in it, with which they doo not ſeeke to raiſe vp a Ghoſt, and, like the hog that conuerts the ſixth part of his meate into briſtels, ſo haue they conuerted ſixe parts of my booke into bitternes.

Aretine, in a Commedie of his, wittily complaineth that vpſtart Commenters, with their Annotations and gloſes, had extorted that ſenſe and Morall out of *Petrarch*, which if *Petrarch* were aliue, a hundred Strappadoes might not make him confeſſe or ſubſcribe too ; So may I complaine that raſh heads, vpſtart Interpreters, haue extorted & rakte that vnreuerent meaning out of my lines, which a thouſand deaths cannot make mee ere grant that I dreamd off.

To them that are abuſed by their owne iealous collections, and no determined treſpaſſe of mine, this aduice, by the way of example, will I giue.

One comming to Doctour *Perne* on a time, and telling him that hee was miſerably raild on ſuch a day in a Sermon in Saint Maries in *Cam-*

bridge, I but quoth he, (in his puling manner of ſpeaking) did he name me, did he name me? I warrant you, goe and aſke him, and hee will ſay he meant not mee; So they that are vngroundedly offended at any thing in *Pierce Pennileſſe*, firſt let them looke if I did name them; if not, but the matter hangeth in ſuſpence, let them ſend to mee for my expoſition, and not buy it at the ſeconde hand, and I doe not doubt but they will be throughly ſatisfied.

Hee / that wraps himſelfe in earth, like the Foxe, to catch birds, may haps haue a heauy cart go ouer him before he be aware, and breake his backe.

A number of Apes may get the glowworme in the night and thinke to kindle fire with it, becauſe it gliſters ſo, but, God wote, they are beguiled, it proues in the end to be but fools fire: the poore worme alone with their blowing warmed, they ſtarud for colde whiles their wood is vntoucht. Who but a Foppe wil labour to anatomize a Flye? Fables were free for any bondman to ſpeake in old time, as *Æſope* for an inſtance: their alluſion was not reſtrained to any particular humor of ſpite, but generally applyed to a generall vice. Now a man may not talke of a dog, but it is ſurmiſed he aimes at him that giueth the dog in his Creſt: hee cannot name

ſtraw, but hee muſt plucke a wheate ſheaffe in pieces, *Intelligendo faciunt vt nihil intelligant.*

What euer they be that thus perſecute Art (as the Alcumiſts are ſaid to perſecute Nature) I would wiſh them to abate the edge of their wit, and not grinde their colours ſo harde: hauing founde that which is blacke, let them not, with our forenamed Gold-falſifiers, ſeeke for a ſubſtance that is blacker than black, or angle for frogs in a cleare fountaine.

From the admonition of theſe vncurteous mis-conſterers, I come to *The kilcow champion of the three brethren*; he forſooth wil be the firſt that ſhal giue *Pierce Penileſſe* a *non placet.*

It is not inough that hee bepiſt his credite, about twelue yeeres ago, with *Three proper and wittie familiar letters*, but ſtill he muſt be running on the *letter*, and abuſing the Queenes Engliſh without pittie or mercie.

Bee / it knowne vnto you (Chriſtian Readers) this man is a foreſtaller of the market of fame, an ingroſſer of glorie, a mountebancke of ſtrange wordes, a meere marchant of babies and conny-ſkins.

Hold vp thy hand, G. H., thou art heere indited for an incrocher vpon the fee-ſimple of the Latin, an enemie to Carriers, as one that takes their occupation out of their hands, and doſt

nothing but tranſport letters vp and downe in thý owne commendation, a conſpiratour and practiſer to make Printers rich, by making thyſelfe ridiculous, a manifeſt briber of Bookeſellers and Stationers, to helpe thee to ſell away thy bookes (whoſe impreſſion thou paidſt for) that thou mayſt haue money to goe home to Trinitie Hall to diſcharge thy commons.

I ſay no more but Lord haue mercie vpon thee, for thou art falne into his hands that will plague thee.

Gentlemen, will you be inſtructed in the quarrell that hath cauſd him lay about him with his penne and incke horne ſo couragiouſly? About two yeeres ſince (a fatall time to familiar Epiſtles) a certayne Theologicall gimpanado, a demie diuine, no higher than a Tailors preſſing iron, brother to this huge booke-beare, that writes himſelfe *One of the Emperour Iuſtinians Courtiers*, tooke vppon him to ſet his foote to mine, and ouer crow mee with comparatiue tearmes. I proteſt I neuer turnd vp any cowſheard to looke for this ſcarabe flye. I had no conceit as then of diſcouering a breed of fooles in the three brothers bookes: marry, when I beheld ordinance planted on edge of the pulpit againſt me, & that there was no remedy but the blind Vicar would needs let flie at me with his Churchdore keies, & curſe me with bel, book and

candle, becaufe in my Alphabet of Idiots I had ouer / fkipt the Hs, what could I doe but draw vppon him with my penne, and defende my felfe with it and a paper buckler as well as I might.

Say, I am as verie a Turke as hee that three yeeres ago ranne vpon ropes, if euer I fpeld eyther his or anie of his kindreds name in reproch, before hee barkt againft mee as one of the enemies of the Lambe of God, and fetcht allufions out of the Buttery to debafe mee.

Heere beginneth the fray. I vpbraid godly predication with his wicked conuerfation, I fquirt inke into his decayed eyes with iniquitie to mend their difeafed fight, that they may a little better defcend into my fchollerfhip and learning. The Ecclefiafticall duns, inftead of recouery, waxeth ftarke blind thereby (as a preferuative to fome, is poyfon to others): hee gets an olde Fencer, his brother, to be reuenged on me for my Phificke; who, flourifhing about my eares with his two hand fworde of Oratory and Poetry, peraduenture fhakes fome of the ruft of it on my fhoulders, but otherwife ftrikes mee not but with the fhadowe of it, which is no more than a flappe with the falfe fcabberd of contumelie: whether am I in this cafe to arme my felfe againft his intent of iniurie, or fitte ftill with my finger in my mouth, in hope to bee one of fimplicities martyrs?

A queſt of honorable minded Caualiers go vppon it, and if they ſhall find by the Law of armes or of ale, that I, beeing firſt prouokt, am to bee inioynde to the peace, or be ſworne true ſeruant to cowardize & patience, when wrong preſſeth mee to the warres; then will I bind my ſelfe prentiſe to a Cobler, and freſh vnderlay all thoſe writings of mine that haue trodde awrie.

Be / aduertiſed (gentle audience) that the *Doctors* proceedings haue thruſt vpon mee this ſowterly Metaphor, who, firſt contriuing his confutation in a ſhort Pamphlet of ſix leaues, like a paire of ſummer pumps: afterward (winter growing on) clapt a paire of double ſoales on it like a good huſband, added eight ſheets more, and prickt thoſe ſheets or ſoales, as full of the hob-nayles of repreſion as they could ſticke.

It is not thoſe his new clowted ſtartops iwis, that ſhall carry him out of the durt.

Sweet Gentlemen, be but indifferent, and you ſhal ſee me deſperate. Heere lies my hatte, and there my cloake, to which I reſemble my two Epiſtles, being the vpper garments of my booke as the other of my body: Saint Fame for mee, and thus I runne vpon him.

Tho. Naſhe. /

The foure Letters Confuted.

G*ABRIEL*, and not onely *Gabriel*, but *Gabrielissime Gabriel*, no Angell but ANGELOS, id est, *Nuntius*, a Fawne-guest Messenger twixt Maister *Bird* and Maister *Demetrius*: Behold, here stands he that will make it good, on thy foure Letters bodie, that thou art a filthy vaine foole. Thy booke I commend; as very well printed: and like wondrous well, because all men dislike it.

I agree with thee that there are in it *some matters of note*, for there are a great many bare-foote rimes in it, that goe as iumpe as a Fiddle, with euery ballet-makers note: and if according to their manner, you had tun'd them ouer the head, it had beene nere the worse, for by that meanes you might haue had your name chaunted in euery corner of the streete, then the which there can be nothing more *melodiouslie addoulce* to

your *deuine Entelechy*. O they would haue trowld off brauely to the tune of *O man in Desperation*, and, like *Marenzos* Madrigals, the mournefull note naturally haue affected the miserable Dittie.

Doe you knowe your owne misbegotten bodgery *Entelechy* / and *addoulce*? With these two Hermophrodite phrases, being halfe Latin and halfe English, hast thou puld out the very guts of the inkehorne.

LETTERS.

To all curteous mindes that will vouchsafe the reading.

Comment.

In their absence, this be deliuered to *Megge Curtis* in Shorditch, to stop mustard pots with.

The particular Contents.

L. *A Præface to courteous mindes.*

C. As much to say as Proface, much good do it you, would it were better for you.

L. *A Letter to* M. Emanuel Demetrius, *with a sonnet thereto annexed.*

C. That is, as it were a purgation vpon a vomit, buskins vpon pantophles.

L. *A Letter to M.* Bird.

C. Or little matter wrapt vp in many words.

L. *A Letter to euerie fauorable and indifferent Reader.*

C. *Id est*, An exhortation to all Readers, that they ſhall reade nothing but his works.

L. *Another letter to the ſame, extorted after the reſt.*

C. By interpretation, a Letter whereof his inuention had a hard ſtoole, and yet it was for his eaſe, though not for his honeſtie : and ſo forth, as the Text ſhall direct you at large.

Heere / beginneth the firſt Epiſtle and firſt Booke of *Orator Gabriell to the Catilinaries or Philippicks.*

Wherein is diuulged *that venum is venum and will infect, that that which is done cannot* (de facto) *be vndone, that fauour is a curteous Reader*, and *G. H. your thankfull debter.*

A Comment vpon the Text.

The learned Orator in this Epiſtle *taketh preciſe order* he will not be too eloquent, and yet it ſhall be (1) *as well for enditing vnworthie to be publiſhed, as for publiſhing vnworthie to be endited.*

C. He had many aduerſaries in thoſe times that he wrote, amongſt the which Cloth-breeches and Veluet-breeches (his fathers pouerty, and his owne pride, were none of the meaneſt).

After them ſtart up one *Pierce Pennileſſe*, and

hee likewiſe was a ſtumbling blocke in his way. (Penurie not long tarries after pride ; pray all the ropes in *Saffron Walden* that I do not propheſie). Amen, Amen, quoth M. *Bird* and M. *Demetrius.*

Hee forbeares to ſpeake much in this place of the one or the other, *becauſe his letters are more forward to accuſe them than their owne bo̅oks to condemne them ;* yet for a touch by the way, hee talks that Greene is no liuerey / for this winter, *it is pitifully blaſted and faded in euerie meade,* by the ſtrong breath of his barbariſme.

Hee hath a twitch at *Pierce Penniletſſe* too, at the parting ſtile, and tearms him *the Deuils Orator by profeſſion, and his Dames Poet by practiſe:* wherein mee thinks (the ſurreuerence of his works not impaired) he hath verie highly ouerſhotte himſelfe: for no more is *Pierce Penniletſſe* to be cald the Deuils Orator for making a Supplication to the Deuill, than hee is to bee helde for a Rhethoritian, for ſetting foorth *Gabrielis Scuruei Rhetor,* wherein hee thought to haue knockt out the braines of poore *Tullies Orator,* but in veritie did nothing elſe, but gather a flaunting vnſauory fore-horſe noſegay out of his well furniſhed garland.

The aduancemēt of the Deuils Oratorſhip, which he aſcribeth to *Pierce Penniletſſe,* me thinks had beene a fit place for his Doctorſhip, when hee miſt

the Oratorſhip of the Vniuerſitie, of which in the ſequele of his booke, he moſt ſlanderouſly complaineth. Doctor *Perne*, *Greene*, no dead man he ſpareth.

What he ſhould *ſubaudi* by his *Dames Poet*, I ſcarſe apprehend, except this, that *Pierce* his Father was *Dame Laws*[*on's*] Poet, and writte many goodly ſtories of her in *An Almond for* [*a*] *Parrat*.

Thoſe that will take a Lecture in our Orators letters muſt not *read*, *excuſe*, *commend*, *credite or beleeue anie approoued truth* in Pierce Pennileſſe, eſpecially if it be anything that vpbraideth the great Baboune his brother.

Hee will ſtoppe the beginning, *id eſt*, when hee hath come behind a man and broke his head, ſeeke to bind him to the good abearing, *or els the ende were like to proue pernitious and perillous* to his confuſion.

Some/what hee mutters of *defamation and iuſt commendation*, & what a hell it is for him, that hath built his heauen in vaine-glory, to bee puld by the ſleeue and bidde *reſpice finem*, looke backe to his Fathers houſe ; but I ouerſlippe it as friuolous, becauſe all the world knowes him better than he knowes himſelfe, & though he play the Phariſie neuer ſo in iuſtifying his owne innocence, theres none will beleeue him.

Let this bee ſpoken once for all, as I haue a

ſoule to ſaue, till this day in all my life, with tongue nor penne, did I euer in the leaſt worde or tittle derogate from the Doctor. If his brother (without any former prouocation on my part, God is my witneſſe) rayld on me groſſely, expreſly namde mee, compard me to *Martin*, indeuord to take from mee all eſtimation of Arte or witte, haue I not cauſe to beſtirre mee?

Gabriell, I will beſtirre mee, for all like an Alehouſe Knight, thou crau'ſt of *Iuſtice to do thee reaſon;* as for *impudencie and calumny*, I returne them in thy face, that, in one booke of tenne ſheets of paper, haſt publiſhed aboue two hundred lies.

Had they been wittie lies, or merry lies, they would neuer haue greeu'd mee: but palpable lies, damned lies, lies as big as one of the Guardes chynes of beefe, who can abide?

Ile make thee of my counſaile, becauſe I loue thee (not): when I was in Cambridge, and but a childe, I was indifferently perſwaded of thee: mee thought by thy apparell and thy gate, thou ſhouldſt haue beene a fine fellow: Little did I ſuſpect that thou wert brother to *Io. Pæan* (whom inwardly I alwaies grudgd at for writing againſt *Ariſtotle*) or any of the Hs of Hempehall, but a Caualier of a clean contrary houſe: now thou haſt quite ſpoild thy ſelfe, from the foote to the / head I can tell how thou art faſhioned.

Teterrime frater, and not *fraterrime frater*, maiſt thou verie wofully exclaime, for in helping him, thou haſt crackt thy credit through the ring, made thy infamie currant as farre as the Queenes coyne goes.

But it may be thou haſt a ſider cloke for this quarrell: thou wilt obiect, thy Father was abuſd, & that made thee write. What, by mee, or *Greene*, or both?

If by *Greene* and not mee, thou ſhouldſt haue written againſt *Greene* and not mee. If by both, I will anſwere for both, but not by both, therefore I will aunſwere but for one.

Giue an inſtance, if thou canſt for thy life, wherin in any leafe of *Pierce Penileſſe* I had ſo much as halfe a ſillables relation to thee, or offred one iot of indignitie to thy Father, more than naming the greateſt dignitie he hath, when for varietie of Epithites, I calde thy brother *the ſonne of a Ropemaker*.

We ſhall haue a good ſonne of you anone, if you be aſhamd of your fathers occupation: ah thou wilt nere thriue, that art beholding to a trade, and canſt not abide to heare of it.

Thou doſt liue by the gallows, & wouldſt not haue a ſhooe to put on thy foot, if thy father had no traffike with the hangman. Had I a Rope-maker to my father, & ſome body had caſt it in

my teeth, I would foorthwith haue writ in praiſe of Ropemakers, & prou'd it by ſoũd ſillogiſtry to be one of the 7 liberal ſciences.

Somewhat I am priuie to the cauſe of *Greenes* inueighing againſt the three brothers. Thy hot-ſpirited brother *Richard* (a notable ruffian with his pen) hauing firſt tooke vpon him in his blundring *Perſiual*, to play the Iacke of both ſides twixt *Martin* and vs, and ſnarld priuily at *Pap-hatchet*, *Paſquill*, & others, that oppoſde / themſelues againſt the open ſlaunder of that mightie platformer of Atheiſme, preſently after dribbed forth another fooles bolt, a booke I ſhoulde ſay, which he chriſtened *The Lambe of God.*

That booke was a learned booke, a labourd booke; for three yere before he put it in print, he had preacht it all without booke.

I my ſelfe haue ſome of it in a booke of Sermons that my Tutor at Cambridge made mee gather euery Sunday. Then being very yoong, I counted it the abiecteſt and frothieſt forme of Diuinitie that came in that place. Now more confirmed in age and Art, I confirme my ill opinion of it.

Neither do I vrge this, as if it were a hainous thing for a man to put ſermons in print after hee preacht them, but obſerue the proud humor of the pert Didimus, that thinks nothing he ſpeakes but

deferues to be put in print, and fpeakes not that fentence in the Pulpit, which before he rough-hewes not ouer with his penne. Befides, I taxe him for turning an olde coate (like a Broker) and felling it for a new.

Thefe and a thoufand more imperfections, might haue beene buried with his bookes in the bottome of a drie-fatte, and there flept quietly amongft the fhauings of the Preffe, if in his Epiftle he had not beene fo arrogantly cenforiall.

Not mee alone did hee reuile and dare to the combat, but glickt at *Pap-hatchet* once more, and miftermed all our other Poets and writers about London, piperly make-plaies and make-bates.

Hence *Greene*, beeing chiefe agent for the companie (for hee writ more than foure other, how well I will not fay: but *Sat citò, fi fat bene*) tooke occafion to canuaze him a little in his Cloth-breeches and / Veluet-breeches, and becaufe by fome probable collections hee geft the elder brothers hand was in it, he coupled them both in one yoake, and, to fulfill the prouerbe *Tria funt omnia*, thruft in the third brother, who made a perfect parriall of Pamphleters.

About fome feauen or eight lines it was which hath pluckt on an inuectiue of fo many leaues. Had hee liu'd, *Gabriel*, and thou fhouldft fo vnarteficially and odioufly libeld againft him as

thou haſt done, he would haue made thee an example of ignominy to all ages that are to come, and driuen thee to eate thy owne booke butterd, as I ſawe him make an Apparriter once in a Tauern eate his Citation, waxe and all, very handſomly ſeru'd twixt two diſhes.

Out vppon thee for an arrant dog-killer, ſtrike a man when he is dead?

So Hares may pull dead Lions by the beards.

Memorandum. I borrowed this ſentence out of a Play. The Theater Poets hall, hath many more ſuch prouerbes to perſecute thee with, becauſe thou haſt ſo ſcornefully derided their profeſſion, and deſpitefully maligned honeſt ſports.

Before I vnbowell the leane Carcaſe of thy book any further, Ile drinke one cup of lambswool *to the Lambe of God and his enemies.*

In the firſt foure leaues of it, I haue ſingled out theſe Godly and fruitfull obſeruations.

Noble Lord, I doe it euen upon former premiſſes, not for any future conſequents.

My booke is not worthy of ſo honorable ſpecialitie as your Patronage.

I will not proſecute it with Theological peculiars, but from the mouth of the ſword I ſpeake, &c.

The hearts of the wicked pant, their ſpirits faile them, they / may well call for butter out of a Lordlie diſh.

You that bee gentle Readers, doe you not laugh at this Lawiers englifh *of former premiffes and future confequents?*

O finicalitie, *your patronages fpeciallitie*, but if he profecute it with *Theologicall peculiars*, we muft needs thruft him *inter oues et boues & reliqua pecora campi.*

From the mouth of the fword I fpeake it, *that butter out of a Lordly difh* is but lewd diet for the Pulpit.

But this is not halfe the littour of incke-hornifme, that thofe foure pages haue pigd. I muft tell you of the *Octonarium of Ramus, the Sefquiamus of Phrigius, the Carthufianifme of Gulielmus Rikel, of Annals, Diaries, Chronologies, & Tropologicall fchoolemen, the Abetilis of the Æthiopians or Pretoionnans, of Gulielmus minatenfis, & S. Ierome allegorized, Abdias, Lyra, Gryfon, Porta, Pantaleon.*

All which hee reckons vp to make the world beleeue he hath read much, but alleadgeth nothing out of them: Nor, I thinke, on my confcience, euer read or knew what they meane, but he hath ftole them by the wholefale out of fome Bookfellers Catalogue, or a table of tractats.

Here are fome of his profounde Annotations: *Iacob tooke* Leah, *for his bedfellow in the darke by night, infteede of* Rachell, *whereby I learne to buy*

my wife candle to goe to bed withall, and admit her not by darke, but by light.

Iacob *was deceiued by* Labans *words:* ergo, *Obligations are better than bils, and we muſt belieue no man, except he will waxe and multiplie in words, and call inke & parchment to witnes.*

Iacob *laide pilled rods with white ſtrakes in the watring places of the ſheepe, whereby I note that in carnal mixture / the ſenſes are opened.*

Iudge you that be Fathers of the Church, whether this be fit matter to edifie or no.

It was not for nothing brother Richard, that *Greene* told you you kiſt your Pariſhioners wiues with holy kiſſes, for you that wil talk of *opening the ſenſes by carnal mixture* (the very act of lecherie) in a Theological Treatiſe, and in the Pulpit, I am afraide, in a priuater place you will practiſe as much as you ſpeake: *Homines raro, niſi male locuti, male faciunt. Olet hircum, olet hircum,* anie modeſt eare would abhorre to heare it.

Farewell vncleane Vicar, and God make thee an honeſt man, for thou art too baudy for mee to deale withall.

It followes in the Text,

To my verie good friend Maiſter Emanuell Demetrius.

This letter of M. *Bird* to M. *Demetrius,* ſhould ſeeme, by all reference or collation of ſtiles, to

bee a Letter which M. *Birds* ſecretarie, *Doctour Gabriell*, indited for him in his owne praiſe, and got him to ſette his hand to when he had done. Or rather, it is no letter, but a certificate (ſuch as Rogues haue) from the head man of the Pariſh where hee was borne, *that* Gabriell *is an excellent generall Scholler, and his Father of good behauiour.*

We will not beleeue it except wee ſee the Towne ſeale ſette to it: but, ſay wee ſhould beleeue it, what doth it make for thee? Haue the Townesmen of *Saffron Waldon* euer heard thee preach, that they ſhould commend thee for an excellent generall ſcholler? or (becauſe thou profeſſeſt thy ſelf a Ciuilian) haſt thou ſollicited any of their cauſes in the bawdy Courtes therabouts? If not, go your wayes a dolt as you came: Maiſter /*Birdes* Letter ſhall not repriue you from the ladder.

But Veluet-breeches and Cloth-breeches (by the iudgement of the beſt man of none of the leaſt towns in Eſſex) *is a fantaſticall and fond Dialogue, and one of the moſt licentious intollerable inuectiues that euer hee read.*

Why?

In it is abuſed an auncient neighbour of his.

How is he abuſed?

In ſtead of his name, hee is called by the craft hee gets his liuing with.

He hath borne office in Walden *aboue twentie yere ſince* (*hoc eſt*, had the keeping of the Towne ſtocke, *alias* the ſtocks) *Ergo* he is no Rope-maker.

He hath maintaind foure ſonnes at Cambridge; *Ergo Greene* is a lewd fellow to ſay he gets his liuing backward.

Three of his ſonnes vniverſally ridiculouſlie reputed of (for inamoratos on their owne works) *in both Vniuerſities and the whole Realme.* The fourth is ſhrunke in the wetting, or elſe the Print ſhoulde haue heard of him.

One of the three (whom the *Quip* entitles the Phyſition) *returning ſicke from Norwitch to Linne in Julie laſt*, was paſt writing any more Almanackes, before *Greene* ere imagined God had thought ſo well of him to take him to him.

Liuor poſt fata quieſcat. Mother Liuers of Newington is a better fortune-teller than he was a Phiſition.

A / Daſh through the Dudgen Sonnet againſt *Greene.*

Put vp thy ſmiter O gentle Peter,
Author and halter make but ill meeter.

I ſcorne to anſwer thy miſhapen rime:
Blocks haue cald ſchollers bayards ere this time.

I would trot a falſe gallop through the reſt of

his ragged Verſes, but that if I ſhould retort his rime dogrell aright, I muſt make my verſes (as he doth his) run hobling like a Brewers Cart vpon the ſtones, and obſerue no length in their feete ; which were *abſurdum per abſurdius*, to infect my vaine with his imitation.

The Analaſis of the whole is this: an olde mechanical meeter-munger would faine raile, if he had anie witte. If *Greene* were *dogge-ſicke and brain-ſicke*, ſure he (poore ſecular Satiriſt) is dolt-ſicke and brainleſſe, that with the toothleſſe gums of his Poetry ſo betuggeth a dead man.

But I cannot be induced to beleue a graue man of his ſort ſhould be ſo rauingly bent : when all comes to all, *ſhorteſt vowels and longeſt mutes* will bewray it to bee a webbe of your owne loomes, M. *Gabriel* : you *mute* foorth many ſuch phraſes in the courſe of your booke, which I will point at as I paſſe by.

I will not robbe you of your due commendation in anything : in this Sonnet you haue counterfeited the ſtile of the olde Vice in the Morals, as right vp and downe as may be.

Let. *Greene, the Connycatcher, of this dreame the*
author,
For his daintie deuiſe deſerueth the hauter.

Vice. / Hey nan anon ſir, ſoft let me make water,
Whip it to go, Ile kiſſe my maiſters daughter.
Tum diddy, tum da, falangte do diddle:
Sol la me fa ſol, conatus in fiddle.

I am afraide your *Doctors fart* will fall out to be a fatall foyſt to your breeches, if we followe you at the hard heeles as we haue begun.

Thou ſhalt not breath a whit, trip and goe, turne ouer a new leafe.

Maiſter Bird, *in the abſence of* M. Demetrius. Perge porrò. *I found his wife curteous:* barlady ſir, but this is ſuſpitious.

A woman is well holpen vp that does you any curteſie in the abſence of her huſband, when you cannot keepe it to your ſelfe, but you muſt blab it in print.

If it were any other but Miſtris *Demetrius* (whome I haue heard to be a modeſt ſober woman, and indued with many vertues) I would play vpon it a litle more. In regard that ſhee is ſo, I forbeare ; and craue pardon in that I haue ſpoken ſo much.

Yet would I haue her vnderſtand how well *the generall ſcholler* her gueſt, hath rewarded hir for his kind entertainment, by bringing her name in queſtion in print.

M. *Bird* and *Demetrius,* I knowe neither of

you by ſight, but this Ile ſay, being of that welth you are, you had better haue ſpent a great deale of money, than come in the mouth of this baſe companion.

What reaſon haue I (ſeeing your names ſubſcribed as his bolſterer, in a matter of defame that concernes mee) but to go through ſtitch with you, as well as him?

He thinks to ouer-beare vs as poore beggers with the / great oſtentation of your rich acquaintance.

Lette all Noblemen take heede how they giue this *Thraſo* the leaſt becke or countenance, for if they beſtowe but halfe a glaunce on him, hele ſtraight put it verie ſolemnly in print, and make it ten times more than it is.

Ile tell you a merry ieaſt.

The time was when this *Timothie Tiptoes* made a Latine Oration to her Majeſtie. Her Highn'es as ſhe is vnto all her ſubiects moſt gratious: ſo to ſchollers ſhe is more louing and affable than any Prince vnder heauen. In which reſpect, of her owne vertue and not his deſert, it pleaſed hir ſo to humble the height of hir iudgment, as to grace him a little whiles he was pronouncing, by theſe or ſuch like tearmes. *Tis a good pretie fellow, a lookes like an Italian*, and after hee had concluded, to call him to kiſſe her royall hand. Herevppon he goes home to his ſtudie, all intraunced, and

writes a whole volume of Verſes ; firſt, *De vultu Itali*, of the countenance of the Italian ; and then *De oſculo manus*, of his kiſſing the Queenes hande. Which two Latin poems he publiſht in a booke of his cald *Ædes Valdinenſes*, proclaiming thereby (as it were to England Fraunce, Italie and Spaine) what fauour hee was in with her Maieſtie.

I diſmiſſe this *Parentheſis*, and *come to his next buſineſſe:* which indeede is his firſt buſineſſe : for tyll *Greene* awakte him out of his ſelfe admiring contemplation, hee had nothing to doe but walke vnder the Ewe tree at Trinitie hall, and ſay :

What may I call this tree, an Ewe tree, O bonny Ewe tree,
Needes to thy boughs will bow this knee, and vaile my bonnetto.

Or / make verſes of weathercocks on the top of ſteeples, as he did once of the weathercocke of Alhallows in Cambridge :

O thou weathercocke that stands on the top of the church of Alhallows,
Come thy waies down if thou darst for thy crowne, and take the wall on vs.

O Heatheniſh and Pagan Hexamiters, come thy waies down frō thy *Doctourſhip*, & learne thy Primer of Poetry ouer again, for certainly tny pen is in ſtate of a Reprobate with all men of iudgement and reckoning.

Come thy waies down from thy Doctourſhip,

ſaid I? *Erraui demens*, thou neuer wenſt vp to it yet.

Fie on hypocriſie and Diſſimulation, that men ſhould make themſelues better than they are!

Alas a Gods will, thou art but a plaine moth-eaten Maiſter of Art, and neuer pollutedſt thy ſelfe with any plaiſtrie or dawbing of Doctourſhip.

Liſt Pauls Churchyard (the peruſer of euerie mans works, & Exchange of all Authors), you are a many of you honeſt fellows, and fauour men of wit.

So it is that a good Gowne and a well pruned paire of mouſtachios, hauing ſtudied ſixteene yeare to make thirteene ill engliſh Hexameters, came to the Vniverſity Court *regentium & non*, to ſue for a commiſſion to carry two faces in a hoode: they not vſing to deny honour to any man that deſerued it, bad him performe all the Schollerlike ceremonies and diſputatiue right appertaining thereto, and he ſhould bee inſtalled.

Noli me tangere: he likt none of that.

A ſtripling that hath an indifferent prety ſtocke of reputation abroade in the worlde already, and ſome credit amongſt his neighbours, as he thinketh, would be / loth to ieoperd all at one throwe at the dice.

If hee ſhould haue diſputed for his degree, diſcended *in arenam & puluerem Philoſophicum*, and

haue been foild, *Aih me* quoth Wit *in lamentable ſort*, what ſhould haue become of him? hee might haue beene ſhot through ere hee were aware, with a Sillogiſme.

No point, *Ergo*, it were wiſely done of goodman *Boores* ſonne, if he ſhould goe to the warres for honor, and returne with a wodden legge, when he may buy a Captaineſhip at home better cheape.

Pumps and Pantofles, becauſe they were well blackt and gliſtered iolly freſhly on it, being rubd ouer with inke, had their grace at length to be Doctour, *Ea lege*, that they ſhould do their acts (that is, performe more than they were able).

Curſt be the time that euer there were any obligations made with conditions, *Vnde habeas quærit nemo, ſed oportet habere*, Howe Dorbell comes to bee Doctour none aſks, but Doctour hee muſt bee to make him right worſhipfull.

Acts are but idle wordes, and the Scripture ſaith, wee muſt giue account for euery idle word.

Pumps and Pantofles ſweare they will iet away with a cleare conſcience at the daie of iudgement, and therfore do no Acts, giue no offence with idle words, onelie like a Hauke let flie at a Partridge, that turnes the taile and betakes her to a walnut-tree, ſo to Oxford they trudge, hauing their grace *ad diſputandum*, and there are confirmed in the ſame degree they tooke at Cambridge: which is

as if a Prentiſe heere in London, as ſoone as hee is enrould, ſhould runne to ſome ſuch Towne as Ipſwich, and there craue to haue his Freedome confirmd as of London: which, in truth is / no Freedome, becauſe hee hath not ſeru'd out his prentiſhip.

Truſt mee not for a dodkin, if there bee not all the Doctourſhip hee hath, yet will the inſolent incke worme write himſelfe Right worſhipfull of the Lawes, and perſonate this man and that man, calling him *my good friend Maiſter Doctour* at euery word.

Doctour or no Doctour, *Greene ſurfeted not of pickled hearing, but of exceeding feare* of his Familiar Epiſtles.

Hee offred in his extreameſt want twentie ſhillings to the Printer to leaue out the matter of the three brothers.

Haud facile credo, I am ſure the Printer beeing of that honeſtie that I take him for, will not affirme it.

Marry this I muſt ſay, there was a learned Doctour of Phiſicke (to whom Greene in his ſickneſſe ſent for counſaile) that hauing read ouer the booke of Veluetbreeches and Clothbreeches, and laughed merrilie at the three brothers legend, wild Green in any caſe either to mittigate it, or leaue it out: Not for any extraordinarie account hee made

of the fraternitie of fooles, but for one of them was proceeded in the ſame facultie of phiſicke hee profeſt, and willinglie hee would haue none of that excellent calling ill ſpoken off.

This was the cauſe of the altring of it, the feare of his Phiſitions diſpleaſure, and not anie feare elſe.

I keepe your *conſcious minde*, with all other odde ends of your halfe fac'd engliſh, till the full concluſion of my booke, where in an honorable *Index* they ſhall be placed according to their degree and ſegnioritie.

Wee / are to vexe you mightely for plucking *Elderton* out of the aſhes of his Ale, and not letting him inioy his nappie muſe of ballad making to himſelfe, but now, when he is as dead as dead beere, you muſt bee finding fault with the brewing of his meeters.

Hough *Thomas Delone*, *Phillip Stubs*, *Robert Armin*, &c., your father *Elderton* is abuſ'd. Reuenge, reuenge on courſe paper and want of matter, that hath moſt ſacriligiouſly contaminated the diuine ſpirit & quinteſſence of a penny a quart.

Helter ſkelter, feare no colours, courſe him, trounce him, one cup of perfect bonauenture licour will inſpire you with more wit and Schollerſhip than hee hath thruſt into his whole packet of Letters.

You that bee lookers on, perhaps imagine I

talke like a merry man, and not in good earneſt, when I ſay that *Eldertons* ghoſt and *Gabriel* are at ſuch ods: but then you knowe nothing, for there hath beene a monſtrous emulation twixt *Elderton* and him time out of mind. Yea, they were riuals in riming foure yeare before the great froſt. Hee expreſſely writ againſt him, 1580, *In his ſhort but ſharpe and learned iudgement of Earthquakes.*

Broome boyes, and cornecutters, (or whatſoeuer trade is more contemptible) come not in his way, ſtand fortie foote from the execution place of his furie, for elſe in the full tide of his ſtandiſh, he will carrie your occupations handſmooth out of towne before him, beſmeare them, drowne them: downe the riuer they goe *Priuily* to the Ile of Dogges with his Pamphlets.

O it is a peſtilent libeller againſt beggers: hee meanes ſhortly to ſet foorth a booke cald his Paraphraſe vpon Paris Garden, wherein hee will ſo tamper / with the interpreter of the Puppits, and betouſe Harry of Tame and great Ned, that Titius *ſhall not vpbraid Caius with euerie thing and nothing* nor Zoylus *anie more flurt* Homer, *nor* Therſites *fling at* Agamemnon.

Holla, holla, holla, *flurt, fling,* what reaſty Rhetoricke haue we here? certes, certes, brother *hoddy doddy*, your penne is a coult by cockes body.

As touching the libertie of Orators and Poets, I will conferre with thee ſomewhat grauely, although thou beeſt a gooſe-cappe and haſt no iudgement.

A libertie they haue thou ſayſt, *but no liberty without bounds, no licence without limitation.*

Ieſu what miſter wonders doſt thou tell us? euery thing hath an end, and a pudding hath two.

That libertie, Poets of late in their inuectiues haue exceeded: they haue borne their ſword vp where it is not lawfull for a poynado that is but the page of proweſſe, to intermeddle.

Thou bringſt in *Mother Hubbard* for an inſtance. Go no further, but here confeſſe thy ſelfe a flat nodgcombe before all this congregation; for thou haſt dealt by thy friend as homely as thou didſt by thy father.

Who publikely accuſde or of late brought *Mother Hubbard* into queſtion, that thou ſhouldſt by rehearſall rekindle againſt him the ſparkes of diſpleaſure that were quenched?

Forgot he the *pure ſanguine of his Fairy Queene,* ſayſt thou?

A *pure ſanguine* ſot art thou, that in vaine-glory to haue *Spencer* known for thy friend, and that thou haſt ſome intereſt in him, cenſereſt him worſe than his deadlieſt enemie would do.

If / any man were vndeſeruedly toucht in it,

thou haſt reuiued his diſgrace that was ſo toucht in it, by renaming it, when it was worn out of al mens mouths and minds.

Beſides, whereas before I thought it a made matter of ſome malitious moralizers againſt him, and no ſubſtance of ſlaunder in truth, now, when thou (that proclaimeſt thy ſelfe the only familiar of his boſome, and therefore ſhouldſt know his ſecretes) giues it out in print that he ouerſhotte himſelfe therein; it cannot chuſe but be ſuſpected to be ſo indeed.

Immortall *Spencer*, no frailtie hath thy fame, but the imputation of this Idiots friendſhip: vpon an vnſpotted *Pegaſus* ſhould thy gorgeous attired *Fayrie Queene* ride triumphant through all reports dominions, but that this mud-born bubble, this bile on the browe of the Vniuerſitie, this bladder of pride newe blowne, challengeth ſome intereſt in her proſperitie.

Of pitch who hath any vſe at all, ſhall be abuſd by it in the end.

High graſſe that floriſheth for a ſeaſon on the houſe toppe, fadeth before the harueſt cals for it, and maye well make a fayre ſhewe, but hath no ſweetneſſe in it. Such is this Aſſe in preſenti, this groſſe painted image of pride, who would faine counterfeite a good witte, but ſcornfull pittie, his beſt patron, knows it becomes him as ill, as an

vnweldy Elephant to imitate a whelpe in his wantonnes.

I wote not how it fals out, but his inuention is ouerweapond ; he hath ſome good words, but he cannot writhe them and toſſe them to and fro nimbly, or ſo bring them about, that hee maye make one ſtreight thruſt at his enemies face.

Coldly and dully *idem per idem*, who cannot indite? but / with life and ſpirit to limne deadnes it ſelfe, *Hoc eſt oratoris proprium.*

L. *Inuectiues by fauour haue beene too bolde, and Satires by vſurpation too preſumptuous.* What pleaſure brings this to the reader? Iacke of the Falcon in Cambridge can ſay as much, and giue no reaſon for it.

But I can prompt you with a demonſtration wherin Inuectiues haue been too bold. Do you remember what you writ in your Item for Earthquakes, *of double fac'd Iani, changeable Camelions, Aſpen leaues, painted ſheathes, and ſepulchers, Aſſes in Lions ſkinnes, dunghill cockes, ſlipperie eeles, dormiſe, &c.?* Beſides your teſtimoniall of Doctour *Perne*, wherein it pleaſed you, of your ſingular liberalitie and bountie, to beſtowe vpon [him] this beautifull *Encomium*:—*A buſie and dizzie head, a brazen forehead, a leaden braine, a wodden witte, a copper face, a ſtonie breſt, a factious and eluiſh heart, a founder of nouelties, a confounder of his owne and*

his friendes good giftes, a morning booke-worme, an afternoon malt-worme, a right Iugler, as full of his ſſeightes, wiles, fetches, caſts of legerdemaine, toyes to mocke Apes withall, odde ſhifts and knauiſh practiſes, as his ſkinne can holde.

Notwithſtanding all this, *you defie, cut and long-taile, that can accuſe you of any ſcandalous part either in word or deede.*

Tully, Horace, Archilochus, Ariſtophanes, Lucian, Iulian, Aretine, goe for no paiment with you: their declamatory ſtiles, brought to the grand teſt of your iudgement, are found counterfeit, *they are a venemous and viprous brood of railers,* becauſe they haue broght in a new kind of a quicke fight, which your decrepite ſlow-mouing capacitie cannot fadge with.

Tuſh, tuſh, you take the graue peake vppon you too / much: who would think you could ſo eaſily ſhake off your olde friendes? Did not you in the fortie one Page, line 2, your Epiſtles to *Collin Clout* vſe this ſpeech?

Extra iocum, *I like your* Dreames *paſſing well: and the rather becauſe they ſauor of that ſingular extraordinary vaine and inuention which I euer fancied moſt, and in a manner admired onely in* Lucian, Petrarch, Aretine, Paſquil.

Dic ſodes (godamercie on *Dicke Sothis* ſoule, for he was a better dauncer than thou art an enditer,

& with his legges he made ſome Muſicke (there is none in thy letters) anſwere mee briefly, I ſay, to the point, haue I varied one vowell from thy originall text in this allegation? If not, I cannot ſee how the Doctours may well be reconcild, one while to commend a man *becauſe his writings ſauour of that ſingular extraordinarie vaine, which he onely admired in* Lucian, Petrarch, Aretine, Paſquil: and then in another booke afterward, to come and call thoſe *ſingular extraordinarie admired men a venemous and viperous brood of railers.*

The auncienter ſort of Poets and Oratours ſhall plead their owne worthineſſe.

Tullie neuer ouerreached himſelf in railing ſo much as in flatterie. His *Phillippicks* (ſound Phyſick applide to a body that could not diſgeſt it) are the things that eſpecially commended him to this art-thriuing age of ours, and had not theſe beene, hee would certainely haue beene ſentenced by a generall verdit of hiſtories for a timerous time-pleaſer.

Who cannot draw a curtaine before a deformed picture? *Plautus* perſonated no Paraſite, but he made him a ſlaue or a bondman.

Fawning and croutching are the naturall geſtures of / feare, and if it bee a vertue for a vaſſaile to licke a mans ſhooes with his tongue, ſure it is

but borrowed from the dogges; and ſo is biting too, if it bee accompanied with ouer lowd barking, or in ſuch wiſe as it cannot pinch but it muſt breake the fleſh and drawe bloud.

Horace, *Perſeus*, *Iuvenall*, my poore iudgment lendeth you plentifull allowance of applauſe: yet had you, with the *Phrigian* melodie, that ſtirreth men vp to battaile and furie, mixt the *Dorian* tune, that fauoreth mirth and pleaſure, your vn-ſugred pilles (howeuer excellently medicinable) would not haue beene ſo harſh in the ſwallowing. So likewiſe *Archilochus*, thou like the preachers to the Curtizans in Roome, that expound to them all Lawe and no Goſpell, art all gall and no ſpleene. Hence came it to paſſe, that with the meere efficacie of thy incenſed *Iambicks*, thou mad'ſt a man runne and hang himſelfe that had angerd thee.

Thee I imbrace *Ariſtophanes*, not ſo much for thy Comœdie of the clowd, which thou wrotſt againſt philoſophers, as for in al other thy inuentions thou interfuſeſt delight with reprehenſion.

Lucian, *Iulian*, *Aretine*, all three admirably bleſt in the abundant giftes of art and nature: yet Religion, which you ſought to ruinate, hath ruinated your good names, and the oppoſing of your eyes againſt the bright ſunne, hath cauſd the worlde condemne your ſight in all other

thinges. I proteſt, were you ought elſe but abhominable Atheiſtes, I would obſtinately defende you, onely becauſe *Laureate Gabriell* articles againſt you.

This I will iuſtifie againſt any *Dromidote* Ergoniſt whatſoeuer, there is no other vnlaſciuious vſe or end of / poetry, but to infamize vice, and magnifie vertue, and that if they aſſemble all the examples of verſe-founders from *Homer* to *Hugh Copland*, they ſhall not find anie of them but hath encountred with the generall abuſes of the times.

Whatſoeuer harpeth not of one of theſe two ſtrings of praiſe and reproofe, is as it were a *Dirige* in prickſong without anie dittie ſet to it, that haply may tickle the eare, but neuer edifies.

In the Romaine common-wealths it was lawful for Poets to reproue that enormitie in the higheſt chairs of authoritie, which none elſe durſt touch, alwaies the ſacred Maieſtie of their *Auguſtus* kept inuiolate: for that was a Plannet exalted aboue their Hexameter horizon, & it was capitall to them in the higheſt degree to diſpute of his ſetting and riſing, or ſearch inquiſitiuely into his predominance and influence.

The ſecrets of God muſt not be ſearcht into. Kings are Gods on earth, their actions muſt not be ſounded by their ſubiects.

Seneca, *Neroes* tutor, founde his death in no

verſe but *Octauia*. Imperious *Lucan* ſprinkled but one drop of bloud on his imperiall chayre, and periſht by him alſo.

Ouid once ſaw *Auguſtus* in a place where he would not haue beene ſeene ; he was exilde preſently to thoſe countries no happy man hears of.

Long might hee, in a blinde Metamorphoſis, haue playd vppon all the wenches in Roome, and regiſtred their priuie ſcapes, vpbrayded inhoſpitalitie with the fable of *Licaon*: alluded to ſome Ambodexter Lawyer vnder the ſtorie of *Battus*: haue deſcribed a noted vnthrift, whoſe ſubſtaunce hawkes and hounds haue deuoured, in the tale of *Acteon*, that was eaten vp / by his owne dogges: mockt Alcumiſtes with *Midas*: picturde inamaratos vnder *Narciſſus*: and ſhrouded a picked effeminate Carpet Knight vnder the fictionate perſon of *Hermophroditus* ; with a thouſand more ſuch vnexileable ouer-thwart merrimentes, if luſt had not led him beyond the proſpect of his birth, or hee ſeene a meaner man ſinning than an Emperour.

Sancta Maria ora pro nobis, how hath my pen loſt it ſelfe in a croude of Poets.

Gaffer *Iobbernoule*, once more well ouer-taken, how doſt thou? how doſt thou? holde vp thy heade, man, take no care: though *Greene* be dead, yet I may liue to doe thee good.

But *by the meanes of his death thou art depriued of the remedie in lawe, which thou intendedst to haue against him, for calling thy father Ropemaker.* Mas, thats true: what action will it beare? *Nihil pro nihilo,* none in law: what it will doe vpon the stage I cannot tell; for there a man maye make action besides his part, when he hath nothing at all to say: and if there, it is but a clownish action that it will beare: for what can bee made of a Ropemaker more than a Clowne? *Will Kempe,* I mistrust it will fall to thy lot for a merriment, one of these dayes.

In short tearmes, thus I demur vpon thy long Kentish-tayld declaration against *Greene.*

Hee inherited more vertues than vices: a iolly long red peake, like the spire of a steeple, hee cherisht continually without cutting, whereat a man might hang a Iewell, it was so sharpe and pendant.

Why should art answer for the infirmities of maners? Hee had his faultes, and thou thy follyes.

Debt and deadly sinne, who is not subiect to? With / any notorious crime I neuer knew him tainted; (& yet tainting is no infamous surgerie for him that hath beene in so many hote skirmishes).

A good fellowe hee was, and would haue drunke

with thee for more *angels* then the Lord thou libeldſt on *gaue thee in Chriſts Colledge*; and in one yeare hee piſt as much againſt the walls, as thou and thy two brothers ſpent in three.

In a night & a day would he haue yarkt vp a Pamphlet as well as in ſeauen yeare, and glad was that Printer that might bee ſo bleſt to pay him deare for the very dregs of his wit.

Hee made no account of winning credite by his workes, as thou doſt, that doſt no good workes, but thinkes to bee famoſed by a ſtrong faith of thine owne worthines: his onely care was to haue a ſpel in his purſe to coniure vp a good cup of wine with at all times.

For the lowſie circumſtance of his pouerty before his death, and ſending that miſerable writte to his wife, it cannot be but thou lyeſt, learned *Gabriell.*

I and one of my fellowes, *Will Monox* (Haſt thou neuer heard of him and his great dagger?) were in company with him a month before he died, at that fatall banquet of Rheniſh wine and pickled hearing (if thou wilt needs haue it ſo) and then the inuentorie of his apparrell came to more than three ſhillings (though thou ſaiſt the contrarie). I know a Broker, in a ſpruce leather ierkin with a great number of golde Rings on his fingers, and a bunch of keies at his girdle, ſhall

giue you thirty ſhillings for the doublet alone, if you can helpe him to it. Harke in your eare, hee had a very faire Cloake with ſleeues, of a graue gooſe turd greene: it would ſerue you as fine as may bee: No more words if you bee wiſe, play the good huſband / and liſten after it, you may buy it ten ſhillings better cheape than it coſt him. By S. Siluer, it is good to bee circumſpect in caſting for the worlde, theres a great many ropes go to ten ſhillings. If you want a greaſy paire of ſilke ſtockings alſo, to ſhew yourſelfe in at the Court, they are to be had too amongſt his moueables. *Fruſtra fit per plura quod fieri poteſt per pauciora:* It is policie to take a rich penniworth whiles it is offred.

Alas euen his fellow writer, that proper yoong man, almoſt ſcorns to cope with thee, thou art ſuch a crow troden Aſſe: doſt thou *in ſome reſpectes wiſh him well and ſpare his name?* in ſome reſpects ſo doth hee wiſh thee as well? (*hoc eſt*, to be as well knowne for a foole as my Lord *Welles*) and promiſeth by me to talke very ſparingly of thy praiſe. For thy name, hee will not ſtoupe to plucke it out of the mire, and put it in his mouth.

By this bleſſed cuppe of ſacke which I now holde in my hand, and drinke to the health of all Chriſten ſoules in, thou art a puiſſant Epitapher.

Yea? thy Muſes foot of the twelues; old long

Meg of Weftminfter? Then, I trowe thou wilt ftride ouer *Greenes* graue and not ftumble: If you doe, wee fhall come to your taking vp.

Letter.

Here lies the man whom Miftris Ifam *cround with bays,*
She fhe that ioyd to heare her nightingales fweete lays.

Comment.

Here Miftris *Ifam*; *Gabriel* floutes thy bays:
Scratch out his eyes that printeth thy difpraife.

She fhe fhe will fcratch, and like a fcritching night-owle come and make a difmal noife vnder thy chamber / windowe, for deriding her fo dunftically. A bigge fat lufty wench it is, that hath an arme like an Amazon, and will bang thee abhominationly, if euer fhee catch thee in her quarters. It is not your *Poet Garifh, and your forehorfe of the parifh* that fhall redeeme you from her fingers, but fhee will ***make actuall proofe of you,*** according as you defire of God in the vnder following lines.

The next weeke, Maifter *Bird* (if his inke-pot haue a cleare current) hee will haue at you with a cap-cafe full of French occurrences, that is, fhape you a meffe of newes out of the fecond courfe of his conceit, as his brother is faid out of the fabulous

abundance of his braine to haue inuented the newes out of *Calabria* (*Iohn Doletas* prophesie of flying dragons, commets, Earthquakes, and inundations).

I am sure it is not yet worne out of mens scorn, for euery Miller made a comment of it, and not an oyster wife but mockt it.

When that fly-boat of Frenchery is once launcht, your trenchor attendant, *Gamaliel Hobgoblin*, intends to tickle vp a Treatise of the barly kurnell, which you set in your garden, out of which there sprung (as you auouched) twelue seuerall eares of corne at one time.

Redoubted Parma *was neuer so matcht* if hee kindle the match of his meeterdome, and let driue at him with a volley of verses. Let not his principalitie trust too much to it, because his name is Latin for a shield; for *Poet Hobbinoll*, hauing *a gallant wit and a brazen penne, will honourably bethinke him, and euen ambitiously frame his stile to a noble emulation of* Liuie, Homer *and the diuinest spirites of all ages*, as hee hath done to the emulation of *Tullie* heeretofore, when hee com/piled a Pamphlet called *Ciceronis Consolatio ad Dolobellam*, and publisht it as a newe part of *Tullie*, which had bin hidde in a Wall a thousand and odde yeares, and was found. out by him before it euer found beeing.

The circumſtance was this ; going downe the water at Cambridge one ſummer euening, and aſking certaine queſtions of the Eccho at Barnewell wall (as the manner is paſſing by) holding her verie narrowly to the poynt, ſhe reuealed vnto him what a treaſure ſhee had hidden amongſt her ſtones ; namely, this new part of *Gabrielis Ciceronis conſolatio ad Dolobellam* : and though ſhe was verie loath to diſcloſe it, yet becauſe ſhee knewe not how ſoone God might call her ; *videlicet*, how ſodainely ſhee might fall ; to diſcharge her conſcience before her death, ſhee would deliuer it vp as freely vnto him as euer it was hers : come and digge for it, hee ſhoulde haue it. Neuer more glad was ſhee in her life, that ſince ſhee muſt needes ſurrender it to the light, ſhe had chaunſt vppon ſuch a Cardinall Corrigidore of incongruitie, and *Tullies* nexte and immediate ſucceſſour, vnder *Carre*, to whoſe carefull repoliſhing ſhe might commit it.

Keepe it, quoth ſhe ?

No, if it were a booke of golde it is THINE : reade it, new print it, dedicate it *from thy gallery at Trinitie Hall* to whom thou wilt.

Whether hee vſde a ſpade or a mattocke for the vnburying of it I know not, but extant it is, and of a hundred I haue heard that it is his.

O *Gabriell*, if thou haſt any manhood in thy ſtarcht peake, looke vpon me and weepe not.

From this day forward ſhall a whole armie of boies come / wondring about thee, as thou goeſt in the ſtreet, and cry *kulleloo, kulleloo, with whup hoo*, there goes the Ape of *Tully*: tih he he, ſteale *Tully*, ſteale *Tully*, away with the Aſſe in the Lions ſkinne.

Nay, but in ſadneſſe, is it not a ſinfull thing for a Scholler & a Chriſtian to turne *Tully*? a Turke would neuer doe it.

Be counſaild in thy calamitie, write no more *Conſolatios ad Dolabellam*, but *Conſolatio ad Doctorē Gabrielem;* thy ſelfe comfort thy ſelfe, and learn to make a vertue of contempt.

Ad ruentem parietem ne inclina, is a prouerbe which would haue preuented all this, if thou couldſt haue ſuffered thy ſelfe to haue beene directed by it: for firſt and formoſt, hadſt not thou ſtept forth to vnder-prop the ruinous wall of thy brothers reputation, I had neuer medled with thee; if thou hadſt not leand too much to an olde wall, when thou pluckſt *Tullie* out of a wall, the damnation of this Ieſt had bin yet vnbegotten.

He that hath borne ſaile in two tempeſts of ſhame, makes a ſport of ſhippe-wracke of good name euer after.

The wall of the welfare of Fraunce that is ſtarted from her King, her true foundation, thy writinges, (more wretched than France) would

faine cleaue vnto, if they could tell how, and *count it a felicity to haue the oportunitie of ſo heroicall an argument.*

God helpe *Alexander*, if hee haue no other Poet to emblazon his atchieuements but *Cherillus.*

High reſolued Earle of *Eſſex*, and victorious Sir *Iohn Norris*, Englands champions, enuied tranquillities confidence, vnworthy are your aduentures Iliades to bee reported by ſuch a ragged reede as the iar/ring Pipe of this *Batillus.* The Portugals & Frenchmens feare will lend your Honors richer ornaments, than his low-flighted affection (fortunes ſummer follower) can frame them.

The ſeale that I haue ſet to your vertues be ſilence ; the argument of prayſe is vnauthorized in any mans mouth but olde age.

When the better parte of youthes feruence is boyld away, and that the ſhowres of many ſorrowes haue ſeaſond our greene heads with experience, with the wither-fac'd weather-beaten Mariner, that talks quaking and ſhudderingly of a ſtorme that hee hath newly toyld through, our wordes will bee written in our viſage.

Euen as the ſunne, ſo no ſcience ſhines in his compleate glory till it be ready to decline.

Theſe be the concluſions, that gray hairs prune & cut downe the proſperitie of yong yeares with as faſt as it aſpires, but let the ſeare Oake looke

himſelfe in the glaſſe of truth, and he ſhal find that *Methuſalems* bleſſing is imbecillitie, beſtowed on any creature but the Foxe, who neuer is a right Foxe till he be ripe for the dunghill.

If my ſtile holde on this ſober Mules pace but a ſheete or two further, I ſhall haue a long beard lyke an Iriſh mantle, droppe out of my mouth before I be aware.

Marry God forfend, for at no hand can I endure to haue my cheeks muffled vp in furre like a Muſcouian, or weare any of this Welch freeze on my face.

O it is a miſerable thing to dreſſe haire like towe twixt a mans teeth, when one cannot drinke but hee muſt thruſt a great ſpunge into the cup, & ſo cleanſe his coole porridge, as it were, through a ſtrayner ere it / comes to his lippes.

This ſecond Epiſtle I haue ſaid prettily well too: I thinke we were beſt begin THIRDLY WHEREAS, for feare a volume ſteale vpon vs vnlookt for.

The Arrainment and Execution of the Third Letter.

To euerie Reader fauourably or indifferently affected.

Text, ſtand to the Barre. Peace there belowe.

Albeit for theſe twelue or thirteene yeares no man hath beene more loath, or more ſcrupulous than my ſelfe, &c.

The body of mee, hee begins like a proclamation: ſufficeth it wee knowe you, your minde, though you ſay no more.

Is not this your drift? you would haue the worlde ſuppoſe you were vrgde to that which proceeded of your owne good nature: like ſome that will ſeeme to bee intreated to take a high place of preferment vppon them, which priuilie before they haue prayde and payde for, and put all their ſtrength to clymbe vp to.

You would foiſt in *non cauſam pro cauſa*, haue it thought your flight from your olde companions obſcuritie and ſilence, was onely, with *Æneas*, to carry your Father on your backe, through the fire of ſlaunder, and by that ſhift, with a falſe plea of patience, vniuſtly driuen from his kingdome, filch a way the harts of the Queenes liege people.

The backe of thoſe creple excuſes I haue broke in / the beginning of my booke: if you haue anie new infringement to deſtitute the inditement of forgerie that I bring againſt you, ſo it is.

Heere enters Argumentum a *teſtimonio humano*, like *Tamberlaine* drawne in a chariot by foure Kings.

I THAT IN MY YOVTH FLATTERD NOT MY SELFE WITH THE EXCEEDING COMMENDATION OF THE GREATEST SCHOLLER IN THE WORLD, &C.

Ille ego qui quondam gracili modulatus auena.

Ah neighbourhood, neighbourhood, dead and buried art thou with Robinhood: a poore creature here is faine to commend himſelfe, for want of friendes to ſpeake for him.

Not the leaſt, but the greateſt Schollers in the WORLD haue not only but exceedingly fedde him fat in his humor of *Braggadochio Glorioſo.*

Yea Spencer *him hath often* Homer *tearmd,*
And Mounſier Bodkin *vowd as much as he;*
Yet cares not *Naſhe* for him a halfepeny.

Lamentable, lamentable, that an indifferent vntoward ciuill Lawyer, who hath read *Plutarch de vtilitate capienda ab inimicis*, & can talke of *Titius and Sempronius*, ſhould be no more ſet by, but SET BY, thruſt aſide, while his betters carry the bredth of the ſtreet before them.

Miſery will humble the haughtieſt heart in the world: *Habemus reum confitentē:* he confeſſeth himſelf a ſinner in vnſufficiency; yet for all that

the aduerſitie of / vniuerſall obloquy hath laide a heauie hande on him, ſtill he retaineth (like concealed land) ſome part of his proud mind in a beggers purſe, ſcorneth to ſay *Fortune my foe*, or aſke a good word for Gods ſake of anie man.

In the plainneſſe of his puft vp nature, he will defie anie man that dare accuſe him of that he is.

Why, why infractiſſime PISTLEPRAGMOS, though *you were yong in yeares, freſh in courage, greene in experience, and ouer-weaning in conceipt* (we will refuſe nothing that you giue vs) when you priuately wrote the letters *that afterward* (by no other but your ſelfe) *were publiquely diuulged*; yet when the bladder is burſt that held you vp ſwimming in ſelfe loue, you muſt not be diſcontented though you ſink.

I haue *toucht the vlcer of your Oratourſhip*, in requiting the nick-name of *The Deuils Oratour.* An Vlcer you may well chriſten it, as an vlcer is a ſwelling, for it was a ſwelling of ambition, no *modeſt petition* of anie merit of yours that did craue it.

The olde Foxe Doctour Perne throughly diſcouered you for a yoong Soppe, or elſe halfe a word *of our high Chauncelors commendation* had ſtood with him inuiolable as an Act of Parliament.

Great men, in writing to thoſe they are acquainted with, haue priuie watch-wordes of

denyall, euen in the higheſt degree of praiſing; they haue many followers, whoſe dutifull ſeruice muſt not bee diſgrac'd with a bitter repulſe in anie ſuite, though vnlawfull.

It may bee, ſome of theſe long deſeruers of his followers labourd him for thee: hee, like *Argus*, hauing eyes that pierce into all eſtates, ſaw thee when thou wert vnſeene of thy ſelfe, and knowing thee to bee vnworthy / of any place of worth, would not diſcountenance his men in ſo ſmal a matter, but writ for thee very vehemently outwardly, when the ſoule of his letter (into which thy ſhallowe braine could not deſcend) included thy vtter miſlike.

Yong bloud is hot, youth haſtie, ingenuitie open, abuſe impatient, choller ſtomachous, temptations buſie. In a word, the Gentleman was vext, and cutte his bridle for verie anger.

The tickling and ſtirring inuectiue vaine, the puffing and ſwelling Satiricall ſpirit came vpon him, as it came vpon *Coppinger* and *A*[*r*]*thington*, when they mounted into the peaſe-cart in Cheape-ſide and preacht: needes hee muſt caſt vp certaine crude humours of English Hexameter Verſes that lay vppon his ſtomacke: a Noble-man ſtoode in his way, as he was vomiting, and from top to toe he all to berayd him with *Tuſcaniſme.*

The Mappe of Cambridge lay not farre off

when he was in the depth of his drudgery, ſome part of the excrements of his anger fell vpon it: poor Doctour *Pernes* picture ſtoode in a corner of that Mappe, and by the miſdemeanour of his mouth it was cleane defac'd.

Signior Immerito (ſo called becauſe *he was and is his friend* vndeſeruedly) was counterfeitly brought in to play a part in that his Enterlude of Epiſtles that was hiſt at, thinking his very name (as the name of *Ned Allen* on the common ſtage) was able to make an ill matter good.

I durſt on my credit vndertake, *Spencer* was no way priuie to the committing of them to the print. Committing I may well call it, for in my opinion G. H. ſhould not haue reapt ſo much diſcredite by beeing com/mitted to Newgate, as by committing that miſbeleeuing proſe to the Preſſe.

I haue vſually ſeene vncircumciſed doltage haue the porch of his Panim pilfries very hugely peſtred with praiſes. *Hay gee* (Gentlemen) comes in with his Plowmans whiſtle in prayſe of *Peter Scurſe* the penne-man, and *Turlery Ginkes*, in a light foote Iigge, libels in commendation of little witte verie loftily; but for an Author to renounce his Chriſtendome to write in his owne commendation, to refuſe the name which his Godfathers and Godmothers gaue him in his baptiſme, and call himſelfe *a well-willer to both the writers*, when hee is the onely

writer himſelfe ; with what face doe you thinke he can aunſwere it at the day of iudgement? *Eſt in te facies ſunt apti luſibus anni: Gabriell,* thou canſt play at faſt and looſe as well as anie man in England.

I will not lye and backbite thee as thou haſt done mee, but are not theſe thy wordes *to the curteous Buyer?*

Shew mee or Immerito, *two Engliſh letters in print, in all pointes equall to theſe, both for the matter it ſelfe, and alſo for the manner of handling, and ſay wee neuer ſaw good Engliſh in our liues.*

Againe, *I eſteeme them for two of the rareſt and fineſt treaties, as well for ingenuous deuiſing, as ſignificant vttering, & cleanly conueying of his matter, that euer I read in this tongue, & I hartily thank God for beſtowing vpon vs ſuch proper and able men with their penne.*

You muſt conceit, hee was his chamber-fellowe *welwillers* cloke, when he ſpake this : the white-liuerd ſlaue was modeſt, and had not the hart to ſay ſo much in his owne perſon, but he muſt put on the vizard of *an vndiſcreete friend.*

It / is not worth the rehearſal : *he ſcribled it in ieaſt for exerciſe of his ſpeech and ſtile, &c., and it was the ſiniſter hap of thoſe vnfortunate letters* to be derided & ſcoft at throughout the whole realme.

The ſharpeſt part of them were read ouer at

Counsell Table, and he referd ouer to the Fleet, to beare his old verſe-fellow noble M. *Valanger* company.

There was no remedie for it but melancholy patience.

A recantation he was glad to make *by way of articles or poſitions*, which hee moderates with a milder name of an *apologie*, & that recantation purchaſt his libertie. Wherefore in grateful lieu of the benefit he receiu'd by it (*although he hath hitherto* vnworthily *ſuppreſt it*) *yet he means to take occaſion by this extraordinary prouocation to publiſh it, with not ſo few as fortie ſuch Academicall exerciſes, and ſundrie other politike diſcourſes.*

And I deeme he will be as good as his word, for euer yet it hath beene his wont, if he writ but a letter to any friend of his, in the way of thanks for the potte of butter, gāmon of bacon, or cheeſe that he ſent to him, ſtraight to giue coppies of it abroad in the world, and propound it to yong gentlemen he came in company with, as a more neceſſary & refined methode of familiar Epiſtles than the Engliſh tongue had hitherto been priuie to.

Lord that men ſhoulde bee ſo malitiouſly bent *to frame a matter of ſome thing: he takes a pleaſurable delight to behaue himſelf ſo that he may be laught at:* how would you prate and inſult, if you knewe as much by him, as he knows by himſelfe.

Nashe, do thy worst, the three brothers bid a Fico for thee: discommend thou them neuer so much, they will palpably praise, and so consequently dispraise, / themselues more in one booke they set foorth, than thou canst disparage them in tenne: yea, rather than faile, Maister *Bird* shall leaue coppying out letters of newes, and meeter it mischieuously in maintenance of their scurrilitiship and ruditie.

Three to one, *par ma foy*, is oddes: not one of them writes an Almanacke, but hee reckons vp all his brothers.

Bee it spoken heere in priuate, *Musa Richardetti fratrizat sat bene pretty:* the Muse of dappert Dickie doth sing as sweet as a cricket.

Nosti manum & stilum, Gabriel? it is thine owne verse in *Ædes Valdinenses*, all saue the inserting of *pretty* instead of *certè*, for rimes sake.

Had phisition *Iohn* liu'd, or not dyde, a little afore Dog-dayes, a sinode of Pispots would haue concluded, that *Pierce Pennilesse* should be confoũded without repriue.

The Spanyards cald their inuasiue fleete agaynst England the Nauie inuincible, yet it was ouercome. Lowe shrubbes haue outliu'd high Cedars: one true man is stronger than two theeues: *Gabriell* & *Richard*, I proclaime open warres with you: March on, *Iocus*, *Ludus*, *Lepos*, my valiaunt men

at armes, and forrage the frontiers of his *Fantasti-callitie* as you haue begun.

Tubalcan, alias *Tuball*, first founder of Farriers Hall, heere is a great complaint made, that *vtriusque Academiæ Robertus Greene* hath mockt thee, because hee saide, that thou wert the first inuenter of Musicke: so *Gabriell Howliglasse* was the first inuenter of English Hexameter verses. *Quid respondes?* canst thou brooke it, yea or no? Is it any treason to thy well tuned hammers to say they begat so renowmed a childe as Mu/sicke? Neither thy hammers nor thou, I know, if they were put to their booke oaths, will euer say it.

The Hexamiter verse, I graunt to be a Gentleman of an auncient house (so is many an english begger), yet this Clyme of ours hee cannot thriue in; our speech is too craggy for him to set his plough in: hee goes twitching and hopping in our language like a man running vpon quagmiers, vp the hill in one Syllable, and down the dale in another, retaining no part of that stately smooth gate, which he vaunts himselfe with amongst the Greeks and Latins.

Homer and Virgil, two valorous Authors, yet were they neuer knighted: they wrote in Hexameter verses: *Ergo, Chaucer*, and *Spencer*, the *Homer* and *Virgil* of England, were farre ouerseene that they wrote not all their Poems in Hexamiter verses also.

In many Countries veluet and Satten is a commoner weare than cloth among vs: *Ergo*, wee muſt leaue wearing of cloth, and goe euerie one in veluet and ſatten, becauſe other Countries vſe ſo.

The text will not beare it, good *Gilgilis Hobberdehoy*.

Our engliſh tongue is nothing too good, but too bad *to imitate the Greeke and Latine*.

Maſter *Stannyhurſt* (though otherwiſe learned) trod a foule lumbring boyſtrous wallowing meaſure, in his tranſlation of *Virgil*. He had neuer been praiſd by *Gabriel* for his labour, if therein hee had not bin ſo famouſly abſurd.

Greene for diſpraiſing his practiſe in that kinde, *is the Greene Maiſter of the blacke Art, the founder of vglie oathes, the father of miſbegotten Infortunatus, the ſcriuener of Croſſebiters, the Patriark of Shifters*, &c. *The Monarch of Croſſebiters*, the wretched fellowe Prince / of *Beggars*: *Emperour of Shifters*, hee had cald him before, but like a drunken man, that remembers not in the morning what he ſpeakes ouer night, ſtill he fetcheth Metaphors from conny-catchers, & doth nothing but *torment vs with tautologies*.

Why thou arrant butter whore, thou cotqueane & ſcrattop of ſcoldes, wilt thou neuer leaue afflicting a dead Carcaſſe, continually read the rethorick

lecture of Ramme Allie? a wifpe, a wifpe, rippe, rippe, you kitchin-ftuffe wrangler!

Wert thou put in the Fleete for pamphleting? Bedlem were a meeter place for thee. Be not afhamd of your promotion: they did you honor that faid you were Fleete-bound, for men of honor haue failde in that Fleete.

Waft paper made thee betake thy felfe to *Limbo Patrum*: had it beene a booke that had beene vendible yet, the opproby had beene the leffe, but for Chandlers merchandize to be fo maffacred, for fheets that ferue for nothing but to wrappe the excrements of hufwiuerie in, *Proh Deum*, what a fpite is it. I haue feene your name cutte with a knife in a wall of the Fleete, I, when I went to vifit a friend of mine there.

Let Maifter *Butler* of Cambridge, his teftimoniall end this controuerfie, who at that time that thy ioyes were in the Fleeting, and thou crying for the Lords fake out at an iron windowe, in a lane not farre from Ludgate hill, queftiond fome of his companions verie inquifitiuelie that were newlie come from London, what nouelties they brought home with them, amongft the reft, he broke into this Hexamiter interrogatorie very abruptlie,

But ah what newes doe you heare of that good Gabriel huffe fnuffe,
Knowne to the world for a foole, and clapt in the Fleete for a Rimer.

Ist true *Gibraltar?* haue I found you? It was not without foundation that you burst into that magnifical insultation,—I THAT IN MY YOVTH FLATTERD NOT MY SELFE, &c.,—for M. *Butler*, for a Phisition being none of the least Schollers, hath commended you exceedingly for a foole & a Rimer. *He that threatned to conjure vp Martins wit*, hath written some thing too, in your praise, in Paphatchet: for all you accuse him to haue courtlie incenst the Earle of Oxford against you. Marke him well: hee is but a little fellow, but hee hath one of the best wits in England. Should he take thee in hand againe (as he flieth from such inferiour concertation), I prophecie that there woulde more gentle Readers die of a merrie mortality, ingendred by the eternall iests he would maule thee with, than there haue done of this last infection. I my self, that inioy but a mite of wit in comparison of his talẽt, in pure affection to my natiue country, make my stile carry a presse saile, am fain to cut off half the streame of thy sport-breeding confusion, for feare it shoulde cause a generall hicket throughout England.

Greene, I can spare thy reuenge no more roome in this booke: thou hast Phisition *Iohn* with thee; cope thou with him, & let me alone with the Ciuilian & Deuine, whom, if I liue, I will so vncessantly haunt, that to auoid the hot chase of my

fierie quill, they ſhalbe conſtraind to enſconſe themſelues in an olde Vrinall caſe that their brother left behind him. Yet ere I bid thee good night, receiue ſome notes as touching his phiſicallity deceaſed. *He had his grace to be Doctor ere he died.* As time may worke all things. *In Norfolke where hee practiſed, he was reputed a proper toward man at a medicine for the toothake, & one of the ſkilfulleſt Phiſitions,* in caſting the heauens water, *that euer came there.*

How / well beloued of the chiefeſt Gentlemen (*& Gentlewomen eſpecially*) *in that ſhire,* it is incredible to bee ſpoken. *Aſtra petit diſertus:* hee is gone to heauen to write more Aſtrologicall diſcourſes: his brothers liue to inherite his olde gownes, and remember his notable ſayings, amongſt the which was one: *Vale Galene,* farewell, mine owne deare *Gabriell: Valete humanæ artes,* heart and good will, but neuer a ragge of money.

Tunc tua res agitur paries cum proximus ardet.

Cloth-breeches houſe is burnt, and the flame goes a feaſting to *Pierce Penileſſe* houſe next.

Neuer til now, *Gregory Habberdine,* went thy foure letters vp Newgate, vp Holburne, vp Tiburne, to hanging.

Gentlemen, by that which hath been already laid open, I doe not doubt but you are vnwaueringly reſolued, this indigeſted Chaos of Doctour-

ſhip, and greedy pothunter after applauſe, is an apparant Publican and ſinner, a ſelfe-loue ſurfetted ſot, a broken-winded galdbacke Iade, that hath borne vp his head in his time, but now is quite foundred & tired; a ſcholler in nothing but the ſcum of ſchollerſhip, a ſtale ſoker at *Tullies Offices*, the droane of droanes, and maiſter drumble-bee of non proficients. What hath he wrote but hath had a wofull end? When did he diſpute but hee duld all his auditorie? his Poetry more ſpiritleſſe than ſmal beere, his Oratory Arts baſtard, not able to make a man rauiſhingly weepe, that hath an Onion at his eye. In Latin, like a louſe, he hath manie legges, many lockes fleec'd from *Tullie*, to carry away and cloath a little body of matter, but yet hee moues but ſlowly, is apparaild verie poorely.

In Engliſh, ice is not ſo cold, yet on the ice of ignorance / will he ſlide. No wiſe man pittie him that periſheth ſo wilfully.

Iudge the world, iudge the higheſt Courts of appeale from the miſcarried worlds iudgement (Cambridge and Oxford) wherein I haue treſpaſſed in *Pierce Pennileſſe*, that hee ſhould talke of *gnaſhing of teeth*, *yong* Phaetons, *yong* Icari, *yong* Chorebi, *young* Babingtons.

Neuer was I in earneſt, til thus he twitted me with the compariſon of a traitour.

Babington, high was thy birth, I a bondſlaue of fortune in compariſon of thee: thy fall greater than *Phaetons*, thy offence as heynous as *Iudaſſes*. May neuer more ſuch foule ſeeds of offence be ſowne in ſo faire a ſhape, may they be markt alwayes to miſchiefe that meane as thou didſt. The braunches of thy ſtocke remaines yet vnblaſted with anie diſobedience. God forbid that our forheades ſhould euer bee blotted with our forefathers miſdemeanors. Die, ill deeds, with your vngratious ill dooers: the liuing haue no portion with the dead: hell once paid his due, heauen gates are open to ſucceeding poſteritie.

Prate of *Pierce Penneleſſe and his paltrie* as long as thou wilt, I will play at put-pinne with thee for all that thou art woorth, but of thy betters gette thee a better diſcourſing penne before thou descantes of,

L. *Greenes inwardeſt companion pinched with want, vexed with diſcredit, tormented with other mens felicitie, and ouerwhelmed with his own miſerie, in a rauing and frantike moode, moſt deſperately exhibiteth a Supplication to the Deuill.*

C. Heerein thou thinkeſt thou haſt won the ſpurs from all writers, but God and Dame Fiction knows thou / art farre wide of thy ayme; for neither was I *Greenes* companion any more than for a carowſe or two, nor pincht with any vn-

gentleman-like want when I inuented *Pierce Penni-lesse.*

Pauper non est cui rerum suppetit vsus: only the discontented meditation of learning, generally now a dayes little valued, and her professors set at naught & dishartened, caused mee to handle that plaintife subiect more seriously.

Vext with discredit (Gabriel) I neuer was, as thou hast beene euer since *Familiaritas peperit contemptū,* thy familiar epistles brought thee into contempt.

Though I haue been pincht with want (as who is not one time or another, *Pierce Pennilesse*) yet my muse neuer wept for want of maintenance as thine did in *Musarum lachrimæ,* that was miserably flouted at in M. *Winkfields* Comœdie of *Pedantius* in Trinitie Colledge.

How am I tormented with other mens felicitie, otherwise thā saying, I know a Cobler that was worth fiue hundred pound, an hostler that had built a goodly Inne, & might dispend forty pound yearely by his land, a Carman that had whipt a thousand pound out of his horse taile; if I had likewise reckond vp a ropemaker, that by tor-menting of hempe, & going backward (which the Deuill would nere doe) had turnd as many Mill sixpences ouer the thumbe, as kept three of his sonnes at Cambridge a long time, & that which is more, three proud sonnes, that when they met the

hangman (their Fathers beſt chapman) would ſcarſe put of their hats to him, why then thou ſhouldſt haue had ſome colour of quarell: thy accuſatiō might iuſtly haue enterd his title *pro aris et focis*, whereas now it is friuolous and forceleſſe.

The / ſharpeſt wits, I perceiue, haue none of the beſt memories: if they had, thou wouldſt nere haue toucht mee with tormenting my ſelfe with other mens felicitie; for how didſt thou torment thyſelfe with other mens felicitie when in the 28 page of thy firſt tome of Epiſtles, thou exclaimſt, *that in no age ſo little was ſo much made of*, *nothing advaunſt to be ſomething*, *Numbers made of Ciphars*, that is, by interpretatiō, all thoſe that were aduaunſt either in the Court or commonwealth at that time, had little to commend them, nothing in account worthy preferment, but were meere meacocks & Ciphars in compariſon of thy excellent out-caſt ſelfe that liu'dſt in Cambridge vnmounted.

Hang thee, hang thee, thou common cooſener of curteous readers, thou groſſe ſhifter for ſhitten tapſterly ieſts, haue I imitated Tarltons *play of the ſeaven deadly ſinnes in my plot* of *Pierce Penileſſe?* whom haſt thou not imitated then in the courſe of thy booke? thou haſt borrowed aboue twenty phraſes and epithites from mee, which in ſober ſadneſſe thou makſt vſe of as thy owne, when thou wouldſt exhort more effectuall.

Is it lawfull but for one preacher to preach of the ten commandements? hath none writ of the fiue ſenſes but *Ariſtotle*? was ſinne ſo vtterly aboliſhed with *Tarltons* play of the ſeuen deadly ſins, that ther could be nothing ſaid *ſupra* of that argument?

Canſt thou exemplifie vnto mee (thou impotent moate-catching carper) one minnum of the particular deuice of his play that I purloind? There be manie men of one name that are nothing a kindred. Is there any further diſtribution of ſins, not ſhadowed vnder theſe 7 large ſpreading branches of iniquity, on which a man may worke, and not tread on *Tarletons* heeles? / If not, what blemiſh is it to *Pierce Pennileſſe* to begin where the Stage doth ende, to build vertue a Church on that foundation that the Deuill built his Chappell?

Gabriell, if there be anie witte or induſtrie in thee, now I will dare it to the vttermoſt: write of what thou wilt, in what language thou wilt, and I will confute it and anſwere it. Take truths part, and I wil proue truth to be no truth, marching out of thy dūg-voiding mouth.

Diuinitie I except, which admits no dalliance: but in any other art or profeſſion, of which I am not yet free, and thou ſhalt challenge me to trie maiſtries in, Ile bind my ſelfe Prentiſe too, and ſtudie throughly, though it neuer ſtand mee in

any other ſtead while I liue, but to make one reply, only becauſe I wil haue the laſt word of thee.

I would count it the greateſt puniſhment that *In ſpeech* could lay vpon mee, to be bound to ſtudie the Daniſh tongue, which is able to make any Engliſhman haue the mumpes in his mouth, that ſhall but plunge through one full point of it, yet the Daniſh tongue, or any Turks, or hogs or dogs tongue whatſoeuer, would I learne rather than bee put downe by ſuch a ribauldry *Don Diego* as thou art.

Heigh drawer, fill vs a freſh quart *of new-found phraſes*, ſince *Gabriell* ſaies we borrow all our eloquence from Tauerns: but let it be of the mighty *Burdeaux* grape, pure *vino de monte*, I coniure thee, by the ſame token that *the Deuils dauncing ſchoole in the bottome of a mans purſe that is emptie*, hath beene a gray-beard Prouerbe two hundred yeares before *Tarlton* was borne: Ergo, *no gramercy*, Dicke Tarlton. But *the ſumme of ſummes is this*, I drinke to you, M. *Gabriell*, on / that condition, that you ſhall not excruciate your braine to be conceited, and haue no wit.

Since we are here, on our prating bench in a cloſe roome, and that there is none in company but you, my approoued good friends, *foure Letters*

and certain Sonnets, your Pages, I will rehearſe vnto you ſome part of the Methode of my demeanour in *Pierce Pennileſſe.*

Firſt, in ſo much as the principall ſcope of it is a moſt liuelie anatomie of ſinne, the diuell is made ſpeciall ſuperuiſor of it, to him it is dedicated: as if a man ſhoulde compile a curious examined diſcouerie of whoredome, and dedicate it to the quarter Maiſters of Bridewell, becauſe they are beſt able to puniſh it.

Wherfore as there is no fire without ſome ſmoke, no complaint without ſome precedent cauſe of aggreeuance, I introduce a diſcontented Scholler vnder the perſon of *Pierce Pennileſſe*, tragicallie exclaiming vpon his partial-eid fortune, that kept an Almes boxe of compaſſion in ſtore for euery one but himſelfe. He tels how he toſt his imagination like a dogge in a blanket, ſearcht euerie corner of the houſe of Charitie, to ſee if he could light on any that would ſet a new nappe of an old threedbare Cloake: but, like him that hauing a letter to deliuer to a Scottiſh Lorde, when hee came to his houſe to enquire for him, found no bodie at home but an ape that ſate in the Porch and made mops and mows at him; ſo he, deliuering his vnperuſde papers in Powles Churchyard, the firſt that took them vp was the Ape *Gabriel*, who made mops and mows at them,

beslauering the outside of them a little, but could not enter into the contents, which was an ase beyonde his vnderstanding.

With / the first and second leafe hee plaies verie pretilie, and in ordinarie termes of extenuating, verdits *Pierce Pennilesse for a Grammar Schoole wit;* saies *his Margine is as deeplie learnd as* Fauste præcor gelida, *that his Muse sobbeth and groneth verie piteouslie, bids him not cast himself headlong into the horrible gulph of desperation*, comes ouer him *that hee is a creature of wonderfull hope, as his own* inspired courage diuinely suggesteth, *wils him to inchaunt some magnificent* Mecenas, *to honour* himselfe in honouring him, with a hundred such *grace-wanting* Ironies, cutte out against the woll, that woulde ieopard the best ioint of *Poetica Licentia* to procure laughter, when there crinckled crabbed countenance (the verie resemblance of a sodden dogges face) hath sworne it woulde neuer consent thereunto.

Not the most exquisite thing that is, but the Cou̅sel Table Asse, Richard Clarke, may so Carterly deride.

Euerie milke-maide can gird with Ist true? How saie you lo? who would haue thought it? Good Beare, bite not? A man is a man, though hee hath but a hose on his head.

No such light paiment, *Gabriel*, hast thou at my

hands: I tell thee where, when, and how thou ſhewdſt thy ſelfe a Dunſiuall.

Onely externall defects thou caſts in my diſh: nothing internall in thee, but I prooue that it is altogether excrementall.

A fewe Elegiacall verſes of mine thou pluckeſt in pieces moſt ruthfullie, and quotes them againſt mee as advantageable, together with ſome diſmembred Margine notes, but all is inke caſt away, you recouer no coſts and charges. With one minutes ſtudie Ile diſtroie more, than thou art able to build in ten daies.

Squeiſe / thy hart into thy inkehorne, and it ſhall but congeal into clodderd garbage of confutatiō, thy ſoule hath no effects of a ſoule, thou canſt not ſprinkle it into a ſentence, & make euerie line leape like a cup of neat wine new powred out, as an Orator muſt doe that lies aright in wait for mens affections.

Whome haſt thou wonne to hate mee by light crawling ouer my Text like a Cankerworme?

Some ſuperficial ſlime of poiſon haſt thou drivueld from thy pen in thy ſhallow footed ſliding through my *Supplication*, which one pen ful of repurified inke will exceſſiuelie waſh out. Shall I informe thee (that vnfruitfullie endeuorſt to informe authoritie againſt me) why I infixed thoſe Poeticall latine margēt notes to ſome fewe pages in the beginning

of *Pierce Pennileſſe*? I did it to explaine to ſuch expected ſpiefaults as thou art, that it was no vncouth abhorrencie from the cuſtome of former writers, for a man openly to bewaile his vndeſerued deſtenie.

In the vncaſing of thy brother *Richard*, I calculated the Natiuitie of the *Aſtrologicall Diſcourſe:* I apparentlie ſuggeſted what a lewd piece of Prophecie it was: I regiſtred the infinite ſcorne that the whole Realme entertaind it with, the Adages that ran vpon it, *Tarltons* and *Eldertons nigrum* THETA ſet to it, yet wilt thou, that art the ſonne and heire to ſhameleſſe impudence, the vnlineall vſurper of iudgement from all his true owners, the HOYDEN and pointing ſtock recreation of Trinitie hall, *Vanitas vanitatis & omnia vanitas*, inueſt that in the higheſt throne of Art and Schollerſhip, which a ſcrutinie of ſo manie millions of wel diſcerning condemnations hath concluded to be viler than newesmungrie, & that which is vileſt of all, no leſſe vile than thy Epiſtles.

Moſt / voices, moſt voices, moſt voices; who is on my ſide who? Whether is the *Aſtrologicall Diſcourſe* a better booke than *Pierce Pennileſſe*? Gabriel hangtelow ſaies it is: I am the Defendant, and denie it, and yet I doe not ouercull my owne workes: His aſſertion he countermures him thus:

Pierce Pennileſſe *is a man better acquainted with*

the Diuels of hell than the Starres of Heauen: Ergo, *the Aſtrologicall Diſcourſe is better than the notorious diabolicall diſcourſe of* Pierce Penileſſe.

Once againe I denie his Argument to bee of lawfull age. *Pierce Pennileſſe* is a better Star-munger than a Diuelmunger, which needeth no other FOR to corroberate it but this, that my yea, at all times, is as good as his nay.

How is the *Supplication* a diabolicall Diſcourſe, otherwiſe than as it intreats of the diuerſe natures and properties of Diuils and ſpirits? in that far fetcht ſenſe may the famous *defenſatiue againſt ſuppoſed Prophecies*, and *the Diſcouerie of Witch-craft* be called notorious Diabolicall diſcourſes, as well as the *Supplication*, for they alſo intreate of the illuſions and ſundrie operations of ſpirits: Likewiſe may I ſay that thoſe his foure Letters nowe on their triall, are foure notorious lowſie Diſcourſes, becauſe they lyingly diſcourſe little elſe ſaue *Greenes* lowſie eſtate before his death.

M. *Churchyard*, our old quarrel is renued, when nothing elſe can bee faſtned on mee: this Letter leapper vpbraideth mee with *crying you mercie:* I cannot tell, but I think you will haue a ſaying to him for it. Ther's no reaſon that ſuch a one as he ſhould preſume to intermeddle in your matters, it cannot be done with any intent but to ſtirre mee vp to write againſt you afreſh, / which nothing

vnder heau'n ſhall draw mee to doe. I love you vnfainedly, and admire your aged Muſe, that may well be grand-mother to our grandeloquenteſt Poets at this preſent:

Sanctum & venerabile vetus omne Poema.

Shores wife is yong, though you be ſtept in yeares, in her ſhall you liue when you are dead.

For that vnadviſed indammagement I haue done you heretofore, Ile be your champion henceforward againſt any that dare write againſt you. Onely as euer you would light vpon a good cuppe of old ſacke when you are moſt drie, pocket not vp this ſlie abuſe at a rakehell rampalions hands, one that, when an iniurie is deepe buried in the graue of obliuion, ſhall ſeeke to digge it vp againe, recall that into mens memories which was conſumed and forgotten.

Whoreſon Ninihammer, that wilt aſſault a man & haue no ſtronger weapons.

The Italian ſaith, a man muſt not take knowledge of iniurie till he be able to reuenge it.

Nay but, in plaine good fellowſhip, art thou ſo innocent & vnconceiuing that thou ſhouldſt ere hope to daſh mee quite out of requeſt by telling mee *of the Counter, and my hoſteſſe Penia?*

I yeeld that I haue dealt vpon ſpare commodities of wine and capons in my daies, I haue

ſung *George Gaſcoignes* Counter-tenor; what then? Wilt thou peremptorily define that it is a place where no honeſt man, or Gentleman of credit, euer came?

Heare what I ſay: a Gentleman is neuer throughly entred into credit till he hath beene there; & that Poet, or nouice, be hee what he will, ought to ſuſpect his wit, and remaine halfe in doubt that it is not authenticall, till it hath beene ſeene and allowd in vnthrifts / conſiſtory.

Grande doloris ingenium. Let fooles dwell in no ſtronger houſes than their Fathers built them, but I proteſt I ſhould neuer haue writ paſſion well, or beene a peece of a Poet, if I had not arriu'd in thoſe quarters.

Trace the gallanteſt youthes and braueſt reuellers about Towne in all the by-paths of their expence, & you ſhall vnfallibly finde, that once in their life time they haue viſited that melancholy habitation.

Come, come: if you will goe to the ſound truth of it, there is no place of the earth like it, to make a man wiſe.

Cambridge and Oxford may ſtande vnder the elbowe of it.

I vow if I had a ſonne, I would ſooner ſend him to one of the Counters to learne lawe, than to the Innes of Court or Chauncery.

My hoſteſſe Penia, thats a bugges word: I pry

thee what Morrall haſt thou vnder it? I will depoſe, if thou wilt, that till now I neuer heard of anie ſuch Engliſh name.

There is a certaine thing cald *chriſtian veritie*, & another hight *common ſenſe*, and a third cleapt *humilitie*: they are more requiſite and neceſſary for thee than *modeſtie or diſcretion for mee and my companions*, of which thou ſhouldſt vnderſtand, we are ſo well prouided that we can lend thee and thy brother *Richard* a great deale, and yet keepe more than wee ſhall haue need of for ourſelues.

Wilt thou be ſo hardy and iron-viſaged to gainſay that thy brother Vicars Batchlours hood was not turnd ouer his eares for abuſing of *Ariſtotle?* I know thou haſt more grace than ſo, thou doſt not contradict / it flatly, but ſlubbers it ouer faintly, and comes to recapitulate, not confute ſome of the phraſes I vſde in the vnhandſoming of his diuinitiſhip.

I my ſelfe, in the ſame order of diſgracing thou ſingles them foorth, will haue them vp againe, and ſee if thou, or anie man, can abſurdifie the worſt of them.

I ſay, and will make it good **that in the Aſtrological Diſcourſe thy brother (as if hee had lately caſt the heau'ns water, or beene at the anatomizing of the ſkies intrailes in Surgeons hall) propheſieth of ſuch ſtrange wonders to**

ensue from the starres distemperature, and the vnusuall adulterie of plannets, as none but hee that is bawd to those celestiall bodies, could euer descry.

This too I will ratifie for truthable & legible English, that his Astronomy broke his day with his creditors, and Saturne & Iupiter prou'd honester men than all the world tooke them for.

That the whole Vniversitie hist at him, Tarlton at the Theater made ieastes of him, and Elderton consumed his ale crammed nose to nothing, in beare-baiting him with whole bundels of Ballads.

All this he barely repeates without any disprouement or denudation at all, as if it were so lame in it selfe that it would adnihilate it selfe with the onelie rehearsall of it.

For the gentilitie of the *Nashes* (though it might seeme a humor borrowed from thee to bragge of it) yet some of vs who neuer sought into it til of late, can proue the extancy of our auncestors before there was ever a ropemaker in England. Wee can vaunt larger petigrees than patrimonies, yet of such extrinsecall things, common to tenne thousand calues and oxen, would I not willingly vaunt, only it hath pleased M. Printer, both in this booke and *Pierce Penilesse*, to intaile / a vaine

title to my name, which I care not for, without my confent or priuitie I here auouch.

But on the gentilitie of T. N. his beard, the maifter Butler of Pembroke hall, ftill I will ftand to the death; for it is the very prince Elector of peaks, a beard that I cannot bee perfwaded but was the Emperour *Dionifius* his, furnamed the Tyrant, when hee playde the fchoolemaifter in Corinth.

Gabriell, thou haft a prety polwigge fparrowes tayle peake, yet maift thou not compare with his: thy Father, for all by thy owne confeffion *hee makes haires*, had neuer the art to twilt vp fuch a grim triangle of haire as that.

Be not offended, honeft T. N., that I am thus bold with thee, for I affect thee for the names fake, as much as any one man can do another, and know thee to be a fine fellow, and fit to difcharge a farre higher calling than that wherein thou liu'ft.

What more ftuffe lurketh behind in this letter to be diftributed into fhop-duft?

Pierce Pennileffe *is as childifh and garifh a booke as euer came in print: when he talks of the fheepifh difcourfe of the Lambe of God and his enemies, he faies*, **it is monftrous and abfurd, and not to bee fufferd in a Chriftian congregatiō; that Richard hath fcumd ouer the fchoolmen, and of the froth of their folly made a difh of Diuinitie brewefſe, which the Dogs would not eate.**

If he ſaide ſo (as hee did) and can proue it (as hee hath done) by Sainte *Lubecke*, then *The Lambe of God* is as childiſh and gariſh ſtuffe as euer came in print, indeede.

I, but how doth *Pierce Pennileſſe* expiate the coinquination of theſe obiections?

Richard, whom (*becauſe hee is his brother, he therefore* / *cenſures more curious and rigorous*, in calling him M. H. *than hee would haue done other-wiſe*) *red the Philoſophie Lecture in Cambridge with good liking and ſingular commendation*, when *A per ſe a was not ſo much as* Idoneus auditor ciuilis ſcientiæ, *Ergo, the Lambe of God* beares a better Fleece than hee giues out it doth.

A per ſe a is improoued in nothing ſince, excepting his old Flores Poetarum *and* Tarletons *ſurmounting rethorique, with a little euphuiſme and Greeneſſe inough.*

Gabriel *reports him to the fauourableſt opinion of thoſe that know A per ſe a his Prefaces, rimes, and the very timpanie of his Tarltonizing wit, his Supplication to the Diuel.*

Quiet your ſelues a litle, my Maiſters, and you ſhal ſee me diſpearſe all thoſe cloudes well inough. That *Richard* red the Philoſophie Lecture at *Cambridge*, I doe not withſtand, but how?

Verie Lentenlie and ſcantlie, (farre bee it wee ſhuld ſlander him ſo much as his brother *Richard*

hath done, to ſaie he read it with good liking and ſingularitie). Credite mee, any that hath but a little refuſe *Colloquium* Latine, to interſeame a Lecture with, and can ſaie but *Quapropter vos mei auditores*, may reade with equiualent commendation and liking.

I remember him woondrous well. In the chiefe pompe of that his falſe praiſe, I both heard him, and heard what was the vniuerſall ſlender valuation of him.

There was eloquent *Maiſter Knox*, (a man whoſe loſſe all good learning can neuer ſufficiently deplore) ; twas he and one *Maiſter Iones* of Trinitie Colledge, that, in my time, with more ſpeciall approbation conuerſt in thoſe Readings.

Since / I haue heard of two rare yong men, M. *Meriton*, and another, that in ſupplying that place of ſucceſſion haue ſurmounted all former mediocritie, and wonne themſelues an euerlaſting good name in the Vniuerſitie.

Theſe thou ſhouldſt haue memoriz'd, if any, but thou art giuen to ſpeake well of none but thy ſelfe and thy two brothers.

Thrice fruitfull S. Iohns, how many hundred perfecter Schollers than the three brothers haſt thou nurſt at thy paps, that yet haue not ſhakte off obſcuritie?

Mellifluous PLAYFERE, one of the chief props of

our aged & auntienteſt, & abſoluteſt Vniuerſities preſent flouriſhing. Where doe thy ſupereminent gifts ſhine to themſelues, that the Court cannot bee acquainted with them?

Few ſuch men ſpeake out of Fames higheſt Pulpits, though out of her higheſt Pulpits ſpeake the pureſt of all ſpeakers.

Let me adde one word, and let it not bee thought derogatorie to anie. I cannot bethinke mee of two in England in all things comparable to him for his time. Seldome haue I beheld ſo pregnant a pleaſaunt wit coupled with a memorie of ſuch huge incomprehenſible receipt, deepe reading and delight, better mixt than in his Sermons.

Sed quorſum hæc, how doe theſe digreſſions linke in without *ſubiectum circa quod?*

Flaunting *Richard* and his Philoſophie Lecture, was vnder our fingers euen now, howſoeuer wee haue loſt him. Hold the candle, and you ſhall ſee me caſt a figure for him extempore: Oh hoh, I haue founde him without any further ſeeking. Giue me your eares: *Io / Pæan*, God ſaue them, they are long ones.

Now, betweene you and me declare, as if you were at ſhrift, whether you be not a ſuperlatiue blocke for al you readd the Philoſophie Lecture at Cambridge: Brieflie, brieflie: let mee not ſtand all daie about you.

His confcience accufeth him, hee is ftroke ftarke dumbe ; onely by fignes he craues to bee admitted *in forma pauperis*, that we fhould let him paffe for a pore fellow, and he will fell his birthright in learning, with *Efau*, for a meffe of porrige.

Curæ leues loquuntur: he hath but a little cure to look too. *Maiores ftupent*, more liuing would make him ftudie more.

For this once wee difpence with you, becaufe you looke fo penitentlie on it, but let me not catch you felling any more fuch twife fodden fawduft diuinitie as *the Lambe of God and his enemies*, for if I do, Ile make a dearth of paper in Pater-nofter-rowe (fuch as was not this feauen yeare) onelie with writing againft thee.

A per fe a can doe it : tempt not his clemencie too much. *A per fe a?*

Paffion of God, howe came I by that name? My godfather *Gabriel* gaue it mee, and I muft not refufe it. Nor if you were priuie whence it came would you hold it worthie to be refufed ; for before I had the reuerfion of it hee beftow'd it on a Nobleman, whofe new fafhiond apparell and *Tufcanifh geftures, cringing fide necke, eies glancing, fifnomie fmerking* hauing defcribed to the full, he concludes with this verfe:

Euerie inch A per fe a *his termes and braueries in print.*

Hold you your peace *Nashe*: *that was before you were Idoneus auditor ciuilis scientiæ.* It may bee so, for thou wert a Libeller before I was borne. Yet vnder / correction bee it spoken, I haue come to the schooles and purg'd rheume in my time, when your brother was Philosophie Lecturer; he wanted no *supplosus pedū*, to spend away his houre, that I could help him with.

What since I am improued you partly haue prooued to your cost; and may doe more at large, if God send vs more leysure.

As for *Flores Poetarum*, they are flowers that yet I neuer smelt too. Ile pawne my hand to a halfe-penny, I haue read more good Poets thorough than thou euer hardst of.

The floures of your *Foure Letters* it may be I haue ouerlookt more narrowlie, and done my best deuoire to assemble them together into patheticall posie, which I will here present to Maister Orator *Edge* for a Newyeares gift, leauing them to his *wordie* discretion to be censured, whether they be currant in inkehornisme or no.

Conscius mind: canicular tales: egregious an argument: when as *egregious* is neuer vsed *in english but in the extreame ill part. Ingenuitie: Iouiall mind: valarous Authors: inckehorne aduentures: inckehorne pads: putatiue opinions: putatiue artists: energeticall persuasions: Rascallitie: materiallitie:*

artificiallitie: Fantaſticallitie: diuine Entelechy: loud Mentery: deceitfull perfidy: addicted to Theory: the worlds great Incendiarie: ſirenized furies: ſoueraigntie immenſe: abundant Cauteles: cautelous and aduentrous: cordiall liquor: Catilinaries and Phillipicks: perfunctorie diſcourſes: Dauids ſweetnes olimpique: the Idee high and deepe Abiſſe of excellence: The only Vnicorne of the Muſes: the Aretiniſh mountaine of huge exaggerations: The gratious law of Amneſty: amicable termes: amicable end: / Effectuate: addoulce his melodie: Magy polimechany: extenſiuely emploied: precious Traynment: Nouellets: Notorietie negotiation: mechanician.

Nor are theſe all, for euerie third line hath ſome of this ouer-rackt abſoniſme. Nor do I altogether ſcum off all theſe as the newe ingendred fome of the Engliſh, but allowe ſome of them for a neede to fill vp a verſe; as *Traynment*, and one or two wordes more, which the libertie of proſe might well haue ſpar'd. In a verſe, when a worde of three ſillables cannot thruſt in but ſidelings, to ioynt him euen, we are oftentimes faine to borrowe ſome leſſer quarry of elocution from the Latine, alwaies retaining this for a principle, that a leake of indefinence, as a leake in a ſhippe, muſt needly bee ſtopt with what matter ſoeuer.

Chaucers authoritie, I am certaine, ſhalbe alleadgd againſt me for a many of theſe balductums.

Had *Chaucer* liu'd to this age, I am verily perſwaded hee would haue diſcarded the tone halfe of the harſher ſort of them.

They were the Oouſe which ouerflowing barbariſme, withdrawne to her Scottiſh Northren chanell, had left behind her. Art, like yong graſſe in the ſpring of *Chaucers* floriſhing, was glad to peepe vp through any ſlime of corruption, to be beholding to ſhe car'd not whome for apparaile, trauailing in thoſe colde countries. There is no reaſon that ſhee, a baniſht Queene into this barraine ſoile, hauing monarchizd it ſo long amongſt the Greeks and Romanes, ſhould (although warres furie had humbled her to ſome extremitie) ſtill be conſtrained, when ſhe hath recouerd her ſtate, to weare the robes of aduerſitie, iet it in her old rags, when ſhe is wedded to new proſperitie.

Vtere / *moribus præteritis*, ſaith *Caius Cæſar in Aulus Gellius, loquere verbis præſentibus.*

Thou art mine enemie, *Gabriell*, and, that which is more, a contemptible vnder-foote enemie, or elſe I would teach thy old *Trewantſhip* the true vſe of words, as alſo how more inclinable verſe is than proſe, to dance after the horrizonant pipe of inueterate antiquitie.

It is no matter, ſince thou haſt brought godly inſtruction out of loue with thee, vſe thy own

destruction, raigne sole Emperour of inkehornisme: I wish vnto thee all superabundant increase of the singular gifts of absurditie, and vaine glory: from this time forth for euer, euer, euer, euermore maist thou be canonized as the *Nonparreille* of impious epistlers, the short shredder out of sandy sentences without lime, as *Quintillian* tearmed *Seneca* all lime, and no sande, all matter and no circumstance; the factor for the Fairies and night Vrchins, in supplanting and setting aside the true children of the English, and suborning inkehorne changlings in their steade, the galemafrier of all stiles in one standish, as imitating euerie one, & hauing no seperate forme of writing of thy owne; and to conclude, the onely feather-driuer of phrases, and putter of a good word to it when thou hast once got it, that is betwixt this and the Alpes. So bee it worlde without ende. Chroniclers heare my praiers: good Maister *Stowe*, be not vnmindfull of him.

Thats well remembred, now I talke of Chroniclers: I founde the Astrologicall discourse the other night in the Chronicle. *Gabriell* will outface vs, it is a worke of such deepe arte & iudgement, when it is expressly past vnder record for a coosening prognostication. The wordes are these, though somewhat abbreui / ated, for he makes a long circumlocution of it.

In the yeare 1583, by meanes of an Astrologicall discourse vppon the great and notable coniunction of Saturne **and** Iupiter, **the common sort of people were almost driu'n out of their wits, and knew not what to doe; but when no such thing hapned, they fell to their former securitie, and condemned the discourser of extreame madnesse and follie.**

Ipsissima sunt Aristotelis verba, they are the verie words of *Iohn Tell-troth*, in the 1357 folio of the last edition of the great Chronicle of England.

Mehercule quidem, if it be so taken vp, *Pierce Pennilesse* may cast his cappe after it for euer ouertaking it. But some thing euen now, *Gabriell*, thou wert girding *against my prefaces and rimes, and the timpanie of my Tarltonizing wit.*

Well, these be your words, *præfaces and rimes:* let me studie a little, *præfaces and rimes. Minime verò, si ais nego.* I neuer printed rime in my life, but those verses in the beginning of *Pierce Pennilesse*, though you haue set foorth

Apply to Mas. Martin.

The stories quaint of manie a doutie flie,
That read a lecture to the ventrous elfe.

And so forth as followeth in chambling rowe.

Præfaces two, or a paire of Epistles, I will receyue into the protection of my parentage: out of both which, sucke out one *solæcisme*, or mishapen English word, if thou canst for thy guts.

Wherein haue I borrowed from *Greene* or *Tarlton, that I ſhould thanke them for all I haue?* Is my ſtile like *Greenes*, or my ieaſts like *Tarltons*?

Do I talke of any counterfeit birds, or hearbs, or ſtones, or rake vp any new-found poetry from vnder the wals of *Troy*? If I do, trip mee with it; but I doe not, therefore Ile bee / ſo ſaucy as trip you with the grand lie. Ware ſtumbling of whetſtones in the darke there my maiſters.

This I will proudly boaſt (yet am I nothing a kindred to the three brothers) that the vaine which I haue (be it a *median* vaine, or a madde man) is of my own begetting, and cals no man father in England but my ſelfe, neyther *Euphues*, nor *Tarlton*, nor *Greene*.

Not *Tarlton* nor *Greene* but haue beene contented to let my ſimple iudgement ouerrule them in ſome matters of wit. *Euphues* I readd when I was a little ape in Cambridge, and I then thought it was *Ipſe ille*: it may be excellent good ſtill, for ought I know, for I lookt not on it this ten yeare: but to imitate it I abhorre, otherwiſe than it imitates *Plutarch*, Ouid and the choiceſt Latine Authors.

If you be aduiſde, I tooke *ſhorteſt vowels and longeſt mutes* in the beginning of my booke, as ſuſpitious of being acceſſarie to the making of a Sonnet wherto Maiſter *Chriſtopher Birds* name is

ſet, there I ſaide that you mute forth many ſuch phraſes in the courſe of your booke, which I would point at as I paſt by: Heere I am as good as my word, for I note that thou beeing afraide of beraying thy ſelfe with writing, *wouldeſt faine bee a mute*, when it is too late to repent. Againe, thou reuieſt on vs and ſaiſt *that mutes are courſed and vowels haunted.* Thou art no mute, yet ſhalt thou be haunted and courſed to the full. I will neuer leaue thee as long as I am able to lift a pen.

Whether I ſeeke to bee counted a terrible bulbegger or no, Ile baite thee worſe than a bull, ſo that thou ſhalt deſire ſome body on thy knees to helpe thee with letters of commendation to *Bull*, the hangman, that he may diſpatch thee out of the way before / more affliction come vpon thee.

All the inuectiue and ſatiricall ſpirits ſhall then bee thy familiars, as the furies in hell are the familiars of ſinfull ghoſts, to follow them and torment them without intermiſſion: thou ſhalt bee double girt with girds, and ſcoft at, till thoſe that ſtand by do nothing but cough with laughing.

Thou ſaieſt I profeſſe the art of railing: thou ſhalt not ſay ſo in vaine, for, if there bee any art or depth in it more than *Aretine* or *Agrippa* haue diſcouered or diu'd into, looke that I will ſound it and ſearch it to the vttermoſt, but ere I haue done

with thee ile leaue thee the miferableft creature that the funne euer fawe.

There is no kind of peaceable pleafure in poetrie, but I can drawe equally in the fame yoke with the haughtieft of thofe foule-mouthd backbiters that fay I can do nothing but raile.

I haue written in all forts of humors priuately, I am perfwaded more than any yoong man of my age in England.

The weather is cold, and I am wearie with confuting: the remainder of the colde contents of this Epiftle be thefe.

He enuioufly indeuors, fince he cannot reuenge himfelfe, to incenfe men of high calling againft me, and wold inforce it into their opinions, that whatfoeuer is fpoke in *Pierce Pennileffe* concerning *Pefants, Clownes & hipercriticall hot-fpurs, Midaffes, Buckram Giants, & the mightie Prince of Darkneffe*, is meant of them: let him proue it, or bring the man to my face to whome I euer made any vndutiefull expofition of it. I am to be my own interpreter in this firft cafe: I fay, in *Pierce Penni-leffe* I haue fet downe nothing but that which I / haue had my prefident for, in forraine writers, nor had I the leaft allufion to any man fet aboue mee in degree, but onely glanc'ft at vice generallie.

The tale of the Beare and the Foxe, how euer it may fet fooles heads a worke a farre off, yet I

had no concealed ende in it, but in the one to defcribe the right nature of a bloudthirfty tyrant, whofe indefinite appetite all the pleafures in the earth haue no power to bound in goodnes, but he muft feeke a new felicitie in varietie of cruelty, and deftroying all other mens profperitie; for the other, to figure an hypocrite; let it be *Martin*, if you will, or fome old dog that bites forer than hee, who fecretlie goes and feduceth country Swaines.

Makes them beleeue that honny which their bees brought forth was poyfonous and corrupt.

That they may buy honny cheaper than by being at fuch charges in keeping bees.

That is not neceffary they fhould haue fuch ftately hiues, or lie fucking at fuch precious honnicombs.

If this (which is nothing elfe but to fwim with the ftreame) be to tell tales as fhrewdly as mother *Hubbard*, it fhould feeme mother *Hubbard* is no great fhrewe, howeuer thou, treading on her heeles fo oft, fhee may bee tempted beyonde her ten commandements.

A litle before this, the forefaid fanaticall *Phobetor*, *geremumble*, *tirleriwhifco*, or what you will, cald forth the biggeft gunfhot of my thundering tearmes, fteept in *Aqua fortis* and gunpowder, to come and trie them felues on his paper Target.

But that it is no credite, *Galpogas*, to difcharge

a Cannon againſt a lowſe, thou ſhouldſt not call in vaine: thou ſhouldſt heare Tom a Lincolne roare with / a witnes. Woe worth the daie & the yeare when thou heareſt him. I ſeareblaſt thee nowe but with the winde of my weapon. With the waſt of my words I lay waſt all the feeble fortifications of thy wit. Shewe mee the Vniuerſities hand and ſeale that thou art a Doctour ſealed and deliuered in the preſence of a whole Commenſement, and Ile preſent thee with my whole artillerie ſtore of eloquence.

A bots on thee for mee for a lumpiſh, leaden heeld letter dawber, my ſtile, with treading on thy clammie ſteps, is growne as heauie gated, as if I were bound to an Aldermans pace, with the irons at Newgate cald the widows Almes.

Ere I was chained to thee thus by the necke, I was as light as the Poet *Accius*, who was ſo lowe and ſo ſlender, that hee was faine to put lead in his ſhooes for feare the winde ſhoulde blowe him into another Countrie.

Thoſe that catch Leopards ſet cups of wine before them: thoſe that will winne liking and grace of the readers muſt ſet before them continually that which ſhall cheare them and reuiue them.

Gabriell, thou haſt not done ſo, thou canſt not doe ſo, therefore thy works neither haue, nor can any way hinder mee, nor benefit the Printer.

Euen in the packing vp of my booke, a hot ague hath mee by the backe. Maugre ſickneſſe worſt, a leane arme put out of the bed ſhall grind and paſh euerie crum of thy booke into pin-duſt.

The next peece of ſeruice thou doſt againſt *Pierce Pennileſſe* is naming of him *wofull poueretto, and pleaſant ſuppoſing thou puldſt him by the ragged ſleeue.* Then matcheſt thou thy ſelfe to *Vliſſes*, and him to *Irus: Irrita ſunt hæc omnia:* it is a ſleeueleſſe ieaſt. I haue / beſliu'd thee already for it: it toucheth the body and not the minde. Beſides, I was neuer altogether *Peter Poueretto*, vtterly throwne downe, deſperately ſeperated from all means of releeuing my ſelfe, ſince I knew how to ſeparate a knaue from an honeſt man, or throw my cloake ouer my noſe, when I ſailed by the Counters.

The ragged cognizance on the ſleeue, I may ſay to thee, carried meate in the mouth when time was: doe not diſpraiſe it yet, for it hath many high partakers. *Quæ ſequuntur hujuſmodi ſunt.*

Thou turmoilſt thy *pia mater* to proue baſe births better than the ofspring of many diſcents, becauſe thou art a muſhrumpe ſprung vp in one night, a ſeely mouſe begotten on a moulehill, that wouldſt fayne pearch thy ſelfe on the mountaines, when thy legges are too ſhort to ouercome ſuch a long iourney of glorie.

My margent note, *Meritis expendite causam*, thou wouldst rather than any thing wrest to an enditment of arrogance, & so branch mee into thy tiptoe stocke. I cannot see how thou canst compasse it: For though I bad them weigh the cause by deserts, yet I did not assume too much to my owne deserts, when I expostulated, why Coblers, Hostlers and Carmen should be worth so much, and I, a scholler and a good fellow, a begger. How thou hast arrogated to thy selfe more than *Lucifer*, or any *Miles gloriosus* in the worlde would doe, I haue already noted at large in his due place and order. If thou bestowst any curtesie on mee, and I do not requite it, then call mee cut, and say I was brought vp at Hoggenorton, where pigges play on the Organs.

Wert thou well acquainted with me, thou shouldst per/ceiue that I am very franke where I take, & send away none empty-handed that giue mee but halfe an ill worde.

It is a good signe of grace in thee, that thou confessest *thou hast offences enough of thy owne to aunswere, though thou beest not chargd with thy Fathers*. Once in thy life thou speakst true yet. I beleeue thee and pittie thee. God make thee a good man, for thou hast beene a wilde youth hitherto.

Thy Hexameter verses, or thy hue and crie

after a *perſon as cleare as Chriſtall*, I do not ſo deeply commend, for al *Maiſter* Spencer *long ſince imbraſt it with an ouer-louing ſonnet.*

Why ſhould friends diſſemble one with another? they are very vgly and artleſſe. You will neuer leaue your olde trickes of drawing M. *Spencer* into euerie pybald thing you do. If euer he praiſd thee, it was becauſe he had pickt a fine vaine foole out of thee, and he would keepe thee ſtill a foole, by flattring thee, til ſuch time as he had brought thee into that extreame loue with thy ſelfe, that thou ſhouldſt run mad with the conceit, and ſo be ſcorned of all men.

Yet yet, *Gabriell*, are not we ſet *non plus*: thy *roiſter-doiſterdome* hath not daſht vs out of countenance. If anie man *vſe boiſtrous horſe play, or bee beholding to Carters Logique*, it is thy ſelfe; for with none but clowniſh and royniſh ieaſts doſt thou ruſh vppon vs, and keepſt ſuch *a flurting and a flinging* in euerie leafe, as if thou wert the onely reaſty iade in a country.

Skolding, thou ſaieſt, is the language of ſhrewes, railing the ſtile of rakehels: what concludſt thou from thence? Do I ſcold? Do I raile?

Scolding & railing is loud miſcalling and reuiling one another without wit, ſpeaking euery thing a man knows / by his neighbour, though it bee neuer ſo contrary to all humanitie and good manners, and

would make the ſtanders by almoſt perbrake to heare it. Such is thy inueċtiue againſt *Greene*, where thou talkſt of his lowſines, his ſurfeting, his beggerie and the mother of *Infortunatus* infirmities. If I ſcold, if I raile, I do but *cum ratione inſanire*: *Tully*, *Ouid*, all the olde Poets, *Agrippa*, *Aretine*, and the reſt are all ſcolds and railers, and by thy concluſion flat ſhrewes and rakehels: for I do no more than their examples do warrant mee.

The intoxicate ſpirit of griſly Euridice, I can toſſe ouer as lightly to thee, as thou haſt puft it to mee. My hart is præoccupated with better ſpirits, which haue left her no houſe-roome: thou haſt no ſpirite, as it ſhould appeare by thy writing: intertaine her and the ſpirit of the buttery out of hand, or thou wilt be beaten hand-ſmooth out of Bucklarſbury.

When I parted with thy brother in *Pierce Penni-leſſe* **I left him to be tormented world without ende of our Poets and writers about London, for calling them piperly make-playes and make-bates, not doubting but they would driue him to this iſſue, that he ſhould be conſtrained to goe to the chiefe beame of his benefice, and there beginning a lamẽtable ſpeech, with** *cur ſcripſi, cur perii*, **ende with** *Prauum praua decent, iuuat inconceſſa voluptas*, **& ſo with a trice, truſſe vp his life in the ſtring of his ſance-bell.** Now heere thou thankſt God thou art not ſo vncharitably bent to put ſo much

wit in a ſpeech: like a Parſon in Lancaſhire, that kneeld down on his knees in a zealous paſſion, and very hartily thankt God he neuer knew what that vile Antichriſtian Romiſh Popiſh Latine meant. Did I exhort inke and paper to pray that they might not bee troubled with / him any more? Inke and paper, if they bee true Proteſtants, will pray that they may not be contaminated any more with ſuch abhomination of deſolation, as the three brothers Apocripha pamphleting.

After all this foule weather enſueth a calme dilatement of others too forward harmefulnes, and thy owne backward irefulneſſe: thats diſpatcht; the court hath found it otherwiſe.

Then thou goeſt about to bribe mee to giue ouer this quarrell, and ſaiſt, if I will holde my peace, thou wilt beſtowe more complements of rare amplification vpon mee, than euer thou beſtowdſt on Sir *Philip Sidney*, and gentle Maiſter *Spencer*.

Thou flatterſt mee, and praiſeſt mee.

To make mee a ſmall ſeeming amendes for the iniuries thou haſt done mee, thou reckonſt mee vp *amongſt the deare louers and profeſſed ſonnes of the Muſes, Edmund Spencer, Abraham France, Thomas Watſon, Samuell Daniell.*

With a hundred bleſſings, and many praiers, thou intreatſt mee to loue thee.

Content thy felfe, I will not.

Thou proteſts it was not my perſon thou miſlikt (I am afraide thou wilt make mee thy Ingle) *but my fierce running at Parſon* Richard, *excuſeſt mee by my youth, & promiſeſt to cancell thy impertinent Pamphlet.*

It were good hanging thee now, thou art in fuch a good mind; yet for all this, a dogge will be a dogge, & returne to his vomit doe what a man can: thou muft haue one fquibbe more at the Deuils Orator, & his Dames Poet, or thy penne is not in cleane life. I will permit thee to fay what thou wilt, *to vnderlie,* (as thou defir'ft) *the verdit of Fame her ſelfe,* fo I may lie aboue thee. Lie aboue thee, tell a greater lie than thou doft, no / man is able.

Thus O heauenly Mufe, I thanke thee, for thou haft giu'n me the patience to trauel through the tedious wilderneffe of this Gomorian Epiftle. Not *Hercules,* when he cleanfed the ftables of *Ægeas,* vnder-tooke fuch a ftinking vnfauorie exploit. By thy affiftaunce through a whole region of golden lanes haue I journeied, & now am fafely arriu'd at *not ſpeedily diſpatcht, but haſtily bungled vp as you ſee.* Graunt that all fuch flow difpatchers & haftie bunglers, may haue a long time of reproach to repent them in, and not come abroad to corrupt the aire, & impofthumate mens ears with their pan-pudding profe any more. So bee it, fay all

Englifh people after mee, that haue eares to heare or eies to reade.

Feci, *feci*, *feci*, had I my health, now I had leyfure to be merry, for I haue almoft wafht my hands of the Doctour.

His own regenerate verfes of *the jolly Fly*, *&* *Gibeline and Gwelph*, fome peraduenture may expect that I fhould anfwere. So I would if there were anie thing in them which I had not anfwerd before, but there is nothing; if there were, hauing driuen his fword to his head, I refpect not what he can do with his dagger. Onely I will looke vpon the laft fonnet of M. *Spencers* to the right worfhipfull Maifter G. H., Doctour of the lawes: or it may fo fall out that I will not looke vpon it too, becaufe (*Gabriell*) though I vehemently fufpect it to bee of thy owne doing, it is popt foorth vnder M. *Spencers* name, and his name is able to fanctifie any thing, though falfely afcribed to it.

The fourth letter of our Orators, to the fame fauourable or indifferent reader, was a letter which this many a long fummers day, I dare ieopard my maydenhead / had line hidden in his defke; for it is a fhipmans hofe, that will ferue any man as well as *Green* or mee.

To make fhort, in it, as fortie times before, he brides it and fimpers out a crie, No, forfooth, God dild you hee would not, that hee would: None fo

desirous of quiet as hee, good olde man, who with a pure intent of peace, first put fire to the flame that hath hedgde him in.

He hath preuented Maister *Bunnie* of the second part of his treatise of Pacification; for like some craftie ringleader of rebellion, when hee hath stirred vp a dangerous commotion, and findes, by the too late examination of his forevnexamined defects in himselfe, that so sweet a roote will hardlie effect correspondent fruits, strait, in pollicie to get his pardon, hee strikes saile to the tempest of sedition, and is thrice as earnest in preaching pacification, obedience, and submission: so *Gabriel*, when he hath stird vp against me what tumults he can in stationers Shops, and left the quiuer of his enuie not an arrow vndrawne out, hee finds, by the audit of his ill consumed defectes, that he is not of force inough to hold out: wherefore in pollicie, to auoid further arrearages of infamie, hee tires the text of reconciliation out of breath, and hopeth by the intercession of *a cuppe of white wine and sugar, to be made friends with his fellow writers.*

It cannot choose but he must of necessitie be a very sore fellow, that is so familiar with white wine & sugar, for white wine, in a maner, is good for nothing but to wash sores in, and smudge vp withered beauty with. Well, for all hee would haue *Pierce* make no warres on him, he makes

warres on *Pierce Pennileſſe*, he bebeggereth him again in this epiſtle verie bountifullie: / hee ſaies *that Lordes muſt take heede how they Lord it in his preſence.*

That the Aſſe is the onelie Author he alleadgeth.

That Greene is an Aſſe in print, and he a calfe in print.

That they are both chieftaines in licentiouſneſſe and that truth can ſaie the abhominable villanies of ſuch baſe ſhifting companions, good for nothing but to caſt away themſelues, ſpoile their adherents, &c.

For my beggerie, let that trauell the countries: I haue ſaide more for it than a richer man would haue done, but that I take vppon me to Lord it ouer great Lords, thou art a moſt lewd tungd lurden to ſaie it.

Muſt they take heede how they Lord it in my preſence, what muſt they doe in thy preſence?

That ſitting like a looker on
Of this worlds ſtage, doſt note with critique pen
The ſharpe diſlikes of each condition;
Ne fawneſt for the fauour of the great,
Nor feareſt fooliſh reprehenſion,
But freelie doſt of what thee liſt intreate,
Like a great Lord of peereleſſe libertie,
Lifting the good vp to high honours ſeate,
And th' euill damning euermore to die:
For life and death is in thy doomefull writing.

Whereas thou ſaiſt the Aſſe, in a manner, is the only Author I alleadge, I muſt know how you define an Aſſe before I can tell how to anſwere you; for *Cornelius Agrippa* maketh all the Philoſophers, Oratours, and Poets that euer were, Aſſes: and if ſo, you vnderſtand that I alleadge no Author but the Aſſe; for [if] all Authors are Aſſes, why I am for you; if otherwiſe, thou art worſe than a *Cumane* Aſſe, to leape before thou lookſt, and condemne a man without cauſe.

What Authors doſt thou alleadge in thy booke? not/two but any Grammer Scholler might haue alleadgd.

There is not three kernels of more than common learning in all thy *Foure Letters.* Common learning? not common ſenſe in ſome places.

Of force I muſt graunt that *Greene* came oftner in print than men of iudgement allowed off, but neuertheleſſe he was a daintie ſlaue to content the taile of a Tearme, and ſtuffe Seruing mens pockets.

An Aſſe, *Gabriel*, it is harde thou ſhouldſt name him: for calling me Calfe, it breakes no ſquare, but if I bee a calfe, it is in compariſon of ſuch an Oxe as thy ſelfe.

The chieftaines of licentiouſneſſe, and truth can ſay the abhominable villanies of ſuch baſe foiſting companions, good for nothing, &c. I am of the mind wee ſhall not digeſt this neither.

Anſwere me *ſuccintè & expeditè*, what one period any way leaning to licentiouſnes, canſt thou produce in *Pierce Penni*l*eſſe*?

I talke of a great matter when I tell thee of a period, for I know two ſeuerall periods or full pointes, in this laſt epiſtle, at leaſt fortie lines long a piece.

For the order of my life, it is as ciuil as a ciuil orenge: I lurke in no corners, but conuerſe in a houſe of credit, as well gouerned as any Colledge, where there bee more rare quallified men, and ſelected good Schollers than in any Noblemans houſe that I knowe in England.

If I had committed *ſuch abhominable villanies, or were a baſe ſhifting companion*, it ſtoode not with my Lords honour to keepe me, but if thou haſt ſaide it, & canſt not proue it, what ſlandrous diſhonor haſt thou done him, to giue it out that he keepes *the committers of* / *abhominable villanies and baſe ſhifting companions*, when they are farre honeſter than thy ſelfe.

If I were by thee, I would plucke thee by the beard, and ſpit in thy face, but I would dare thee, and vrge thee beyonde all excuſe, to diſcloſe and proue for thy heart bloud, what villanie or baſe ſhifting by mee thou canſt. I defie all the worlde in that reſpect.

Becauſe thou vſedſt at Cambridge to ſhift for

thy Friday nights ſuppers, and coſen poore victuallers and pie-wiues of Doctours cheeſe and puddinges, thou thinkeſt me one of the ſame religion too.

What *Greene* was, let ſome other anſwere for him as much as I haue done: I had no tuition ouer him: he might haue writ another *Galatæo* of manners, for his manners euerie time I came in his companie: I ſaw no ſuch baſe ſhifting or abhominable villanie by him. Something there was which I haue heard, not ſeene, that hee had not that regarde to his credite in which had beene requiſite he ſhould.

What a *Calimunco* am I to plead for him, as though I were as neere him as his owne ſkinne. A thouſande there bee that haue more reaſon to ſpeake in his behalfe than I, who, ſince I firſt knew him about town, haue beene two yeares together and not ſeene him.

But Ile doe as much for any man, eſpecially for a dead man, that cannot ſpeake for himſelfe. Let vs heare *how we are good for nothing but to caſt awaie our ſelues, ſpoile our adherents, praie on our fauourers, diſhonour our Patrons.* Haue I euer tooke any likelie courſe of caſting away my ſelfe?

Whom canſt thou name that kept me company, and reapt any diſcommoditie by mee? I can name

diuers good Gentlemen *that haue beene my adherents and / fauourers a long time*. Let them report howe I haue ſpoilde them, or praid on them, or put them to one pennie detriment ſince I firſt conſorted with thē.

Haue an eie to the maine-chaunce, for no ſooner ſhall they vnderſtand what thou haſt ſaid by mee of them, but theyle goe neere to haue thee about the eares for this geare, one after another.

My Patrons, or anie that bind me to them by the leaſt good turne, there is no man in England that is, or ſhall (for my ſmall power) bee more thankefull vnto than I. Neuer was I vnthankefull vnto any, no, not to thoſe of whome for deedes I receiued nothing but vnperformed deede promiſing words. It is an honor to be accuſde, and not conuinſt.

One of theſe months I ſhall challenge martir-dome to my ſelfe, and writ large ſtories of the perſecution of tongues. Troth I am as like to perſecute as be perſecuted. Let him take vp his Croſſe and bleſſe himſelfe that croſſeth mee, for I will croſſe ſhinnes with him though euerie ſentence of his were a thouſande tunnes of diſcourſes, as *Gabriel* ſaith, euerie ſentence of his is a diſcourſe. Quods, quods giue me my Text pen againe, for I haue a little more Text to launce.

The ſecretaries of art and nature, if it were not

for friuolous contentions, might bestead the commō-welth with manie puissant engins. As, for example, *Bacons* brasen nose, *Architas* wodden doue, dancing bals, fire breathing gourdes, artificiall flies to hang in the aire by themselues, an egshell that shall run vp to the toppe of a speare.

Archimedes made a heau'n of brasse, but we haue nothing to do with olde brasse and iron.

Apollonius Regimontanus did manie pretie iugling tricks, but wee had rather drinke out of a glasse than / a Iugge: vse a little brittle wit of our owne, than borrow any miracle mettall of the Deuils.

Amongst all other stratagems and puissant engins, what say you to *Mates* Pumpe in Cheapside, to pumpe ouer mutton and porridge into Fraunce? this colde weather our souldiors, I can tell you, haue need of it, and, poore field mise, they haue almost got the colicke and stone with eating of prouant.

Consider of it well, for it is better than all *Bacons, Architas, Archimedes, Apollonius or Regiomontanus* deuices; for *Gabriell,* that professeth all these, with all their helpe cannot make the bias bowle at *Saffron Walden* run downe the hill, when it is throwne down with the hardest hand that may bee, but it will turne vp the hill againe in spite of a mans teeth, and, that which is worst, giue no reason for it.

The Parrat and the Peacock haue leiſure to reuiue and repoliſh their expired workes. You ſpeake like a friend: wele liſten to you when you haue repoliſhed and expired your perfected degree. A Demy Doctor, what a ſhame is it?

Becauſe your books do call for a litle more drinke, and a fewe more clothes when they are gone to bed, that is, when they lie dead, you thinke ours do ſo too. No, no, we doe not vſe to clappe a coat ouer a ierkin, or thruſt any of the children of our braine into their mothers wombe againe, & beget them a new after they are once borne. If it bee a horne booke at his firſt conception, let it be a horne booke ſtill, and turne not eat in the panne, conuert the Paternoſter to a Primer, when it hath begd it ſelfe out at the elbowes vp and downe the cuntrey.

Thou didſt thou knewſt not what in eeking this thy ſhort-waſted Pamphlet, iwis, as thou ſaiſt of thy ſelfe / *Thou art an old trewant, fitter to plaie the dumbe dogge with ſome antients, than the hiſſing ſnake.*

Who be thoſe antient dumbe dogs? we ſhall haue you a Martiniſt when all comes to all, becauſe you cannot thriue with the Ciuill Law, and that you may marry her for any thing you are a kindred to her: therfore you will compare *Whitegift and Cartwright*, white and blacke together, name the

higheſt gouernours of the Church without giuing them anie reuerence or titles of honour, imbrace anie religion which will be euen with the profeſſion that fauors not you.

There is no baile or mainpriſe for it, but wee muſt haue you in the firſt peeping forth of the ſpring, preaching out of a Pulpit in the woods: you haue put on wolues raiment already, ſeduced manie ſimple people vnder the habit of a ſheepe and *Wolfes* print. If you proteſt & lie any more, it is not your ending here like a ſermon, that will make you bee reputed for a ſaint.

Readers, a decaied ſtudent, lately ſhipwrackt with *Si vales bene eſt*, hauing foure Lightors of Letters, cleane caſt away on the rocks called the Biſhop & his Clarks, deſires you all to pray for him, and he will recommend you all to God the next ſermon he penneth, or his brother *Richard.*

He hath a mind to pay euery man his owne, though hee hath ſuſtained great loſſe in fight, *that which he cannot effect he beſeecheth the Lord to accompliſh, and euen to worke a miracle vpon the deafe.*

Lord if it be thy will, let him be an Aſſe ſtill. Gentlemen, I haue no more to ſay to the Doctor diſpoſe of the victorie as you pleaſe: ſhortly I will preſent you with ſomething that ſhal be better than nothing, onely giue mee a gentle hire for my

durtie day labor, and I am your bounden Orator for euer.

Son/netto.

Were there no warres, poore men ſhould haue no peace:
Vnceſſant warres with waſpes and droanes I crie:
Hee that begins, oft knows not how to ceaſe,
They haue begun, Ile follow till I die.
Ile heare no truce, wrong gets no graue in mee,
Abuſe pell mell encounter with abuſe:
Write hee againe, Ile write eternally.
Who feedes reuenge hath found an endleſſe Muſe.
If death ere made his blacke dart of a pen,
My penne his ſpeciall Baily ſhall becum:
Somewhat Ile be reputed of mongſt men,
By ſtriking of this duns or dead or dum.
Awaite the world the Tragedy of wrath:
What next I paint ſhall tread no common path.

Aut nunquam tentes aut perfice.

Tho. Naſhe.

Obseruations for the Readers of this Booke.

Item, whatsoeuer for the most part is here in this booke in change of letter, is our aduersaries owne Text, and vnvaried words, either in this his conuicted Foure Letters, or some other sustie treatise, set forth by him heretofore.

Then, that I am wrested and vtterly diuorced from my owne inuention, & constrained still still, before I am warme in any one vaine, to start away sodainely, and follow him in his vanitie.

Finally, Printers haue many false stitches, which are thus to bee drawen vp.

In the second page of c for Baboune brother, reade Baboune his brother: in the 7 for allegorized & Abdias, reade allegorized Abdias: in the 8 for set hand, reade, set his hand: idem for headmen read headman. In the first of D for *liuor post quiescat*, reade *Liuor post fata quiescat:* in the 5 for plaister of Doctourship, reade plaistrie or dawbing of Doctourship: in the 7 for insolent inckehorne worme, reade insolent incke worme: in the 2 of E for Asse in present, read Asse in presenti: in the 3 for bestow vpon, reade bestow vpon him: in the 5 for effect, reade efficacie. In the 4 of F

for vertuous Syr Iohn Norris, read victorious Syr John Norris: in the 5 page of H for I introduce in a difcontented Scholler, read I introduce a difcontented Scholler: in the 8 for His affentrion, reade His affertion. In the 5 of I for verie companie, reade verie timpanie. In the 5 page of K for in this firft cafe, reade firft in this cafe. [Corrected in the places.—G.]

FINIS.

Printed by Hazell, Watson, and Viney, London and Aylesbury.